



312066 0288 3260 2



University of
Massachusetts
Amherst

L I B R A R Y



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2012 with funding from
Boston Library Consortium Member Libraries

<http://archive.org/details/lizziebordenquar92002fall>



MASS. CC3.3:9/1



THE LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY

GOVERNMENT DOCUMENTS
COLLECTIONMAY 10 2002
University of Massachusetts
Depository Copy

Volume IX, Number 1

\$6.00

January, 2002

ABBY'S MISFORTUNES AND TRIALS!

ABBY DURFEE BORDEN: PORTRAIT OF A STEPMOTHER

By William L. Pavao, Jr.

(Editor's note: Even though our headline author is making his first appearance in these pages, he is well known to most of us. Mr. Pavao has been the Curator of the Lizzie Borden Bed & Breakfast/Museum since August, 1998, and for a year before that, their Archivist. But here is something you may not know, he was the last resident of 92 Second Street, having lived there from August, 1998 through February, 2000.

In addition, Mr. Pavao worked with Leonard Rebello doing research with him during the final year before "Lizzie Borden: Past & Present" was published. His efforts as curator have been focused upon making the Borden house as historically accurate as possible. He credits Leonard Rebello as having been invaluable in this endeavor.

Mr. Pavao has been featured in a number of national documentaries about the Borden case. Most notably, he played William (Billy) Borden for the Lizzie Borden documentary produced by "The Learning Channel" and was featured on the Travel Channel's "World's Creepiest Places" on which the Borden house ranked number one in the world!!



ABBY DURFEE GRAY

Carte-De-Visite Photograph, circa 1862

PHOTOGRAPH COURTESY OF THE FALL RIVER HISTORICAL SOCIETY

And if this was not enough, he is an American history teacher in an advanced placement program in a public school system.

In this article, Mr. Pavao adds some flesh to the portrait of Abby Borden, about whom we have known so little in the past.)

INTRODUCTION

August 4, 1892, 64-year-old Abby Durfee Gray Borden is the first victim of a hatchet-wielding murderer who took her life in the guest chamber of her home at 92 Second Street, Fall River, Massachusetts. The killer's next victim was Andrew Borden, Abby's 69-year-old husband. Mr. Borden was murdered while apparently dozing on the sitting room sofa. The only person ever brought to trial for these murders was Andrew Borden's thirty-two-year-old spinster daughter, Lizzie. In June 1893, a jury of twelve Victorian-era gentlemen found Miss Borden not-guilty of the double patricide. Today, over a century after the murders, the case remains unsolved.

Since 1892, the name Lizzie Borden has become a legend in the annals of American crime. Scholars and amateur detectives have pondered over the evidence in the case for more than a century.

(Continued on Page 10)

THE LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY

A Different Menu:

On The Table This Issue:

Abby Durfee Borden: Portrait of a Stepmother Page 1.
By William L. Pavao, Jr.

Fall River Historical Society News Page 3.
By Dennis A. Binette

The Whitehead House Discovered Page 6.
By Leonard Rebello

Lizbeth's Cause: The Animal Rescue League Page 7.
By Denise Noe

Lizzie Borden in the Spotlight, Again Page 8.
By Neilson Caplain

The Trial Testimony of Mr. John Vinnicum Morse - Part II Page 9.
Permission Granted by the Massachusetts Superior Court



Standard Fare:

BIBLIOGRAPHIC BORDEN Page 4.
by Lisa Zawadzki

LIZBITS Page 5.
by Neilson Caplain

PRINCESS MAPLECROFT Page 2.
by Mary T. Cusack

PRINCESS MAPLECROFT

WELCOME TO 'CHEZ BORDEN.' IF IT'S A CHEAP CUT TO US, IT WILL BE OVER PRICED TO YOURSELF. TONIGHT, AS WELL AS THE USUAL "MUTTON SURPRISE" WE NOW HAVE FAUX-DUCK IN A TANGY ORANGE.

EMMA! NO! NOT THE PIGEONS!!



©2002 Mary T. Cusack

THE LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY

Volume IX, Number 1, January, 2002

Publisher Gabriela Schalow Adler
Editor Maynard F. Bertolet
Copy Editor Jeannine H. Bertolet
Business Manager Mary A. Bouchard
Photographer Jeannine H. Bertolet

Staff Contributors:

Neilson Caplain
Mary T. Cusack
Lisa Zawadzki

Current Issue Contributors:

Dennis A. Binette
Neilson Caplain
Denise Noe
William L. Pavao, Jr.
Leonard Rebello

Printing and Mailing:

TCI Press
21 Industrial Court
Seekonk, MA 02771-2016

The *Lizzie Borden Quarterly* is published four times a year on January 15, April 15, July 15 and October 15. Distribution is by U.S. mail. Current one-year USA mail subscriptions cost \$18.00 for one year and \$30.00 for two years. Non-USA subscriptions are \$24.00 for one year and \$40.00 for two years. The Editor reserves the right to edit and/or revise submissions, without changing intent. If possible, please submit articles on floppy disks in any PC format. To be considered, submissions must be received 60 days prior to the publication date and include the author's name, address and telephone number. Advertising rates are \$50.00 for a quarter-page, \$100.00 for a half-page and \$200.00 for a full-page.

Send all subscription payments to:

Lizzie Borden Quarterly
Dr. Gabriela Schalow Adler - Publisher
Bristol Community College
777 Elsbree Street
Fall River, MA 02720-7391

Send all *LBQ* submissions,
letters to the editor and
address changes to:

Lizzie Borden Quarterly
Mr. Maynard F. Bertolet - Editor
2 Blancoyd Road
Merion Station, PA 19066-1802
Telephone and Fax Numbers: (610) 664-2247
E-Mail: Bertolet@msn.com

Lizzie Borden Quarterly
(ISSN 1069-4900)

©2002 Bristol Community College
All rights reserved.

Unauthorized duplication prohibited by law.

MISS LIZBETH BORDEN'S EDITOR SPEAKS

Well now, it's a new year for all, but to us, we shall remain back in the nineteenth century except, unfortunately, the cost of doing business. Yep, you guessed it, we have come to that point when we are required to raise our prices.

Believe it or not, the last time we raised our prices was in July of 1997. Imagine that, five years ago! I guess we all know what has happened to prices and taxes during that half decade. While we would like to show a profit, it has never happened. Our shortfall has always been covered by *Bristol Community College*. Even after the current increase, we shall continue to suffer shortfalls every issue.

So, effective February 1, 2002, our new pricing structure will be as follows:

USA	1 Year	----	\$18.00
USA	2 Years	----	\$30.00
Non-USA	1 Year	----	\$24.00
Non-USA	2 Years	----	\$40.00

You should receive this issue by January 15, 2002, consequently, if you wish to renew your subscription at the old pricing structure, we shall accept all payments that are postmarked on January 31, 2001, or earlier.

Now, let's talk about a more pleasant subject, and that is:

<http://www.lizzieandrewborden.com/Downloads.htm>

If you have access to the Internet, by all means, don't delay, go there today! Lizzie Borden subscriber Dr. Stefani Koorey has created the most amazing website. At the above location you can download, *free*, the following *complete* items:

1. The Trial of Lizzie Andrew Borden, 1893, Volume I.
2. The Trial of Lizzie Andrew Borden, 1893, Volume II. (Both trial volume transcripts ©2002 Mr. Harold E. Widdows.)
3. Lizzie Borden's Last Will and Testament.
4. Probate records for the Estate of Lizzie Andrew Borden.
5. Witness Statements.
6. Lizzie Borden's Inquest Testimony from the *New Bedford Evening Standard*.
7. Inquest Upon the Deaths of Andrew J. and Abby D. Borden, August 9 - 11, 1892, Volume II.
8. Pearson, Edmund. *The Trial of Lizzie Borden*, New York, Doubleday, 1937.
9. Porter, Edwin H. *The Fall River Tragedy*, Fall River, MA: George R.H. Buffington Publisher, Press of J.D. Munroe, 1893.
(Transcript ©2002 Mr. Terence Duniho.)
10. Emma Borden's Last Will and Testament.
11. John V. Morse's Last Will and Testament.
12. Lunday, Todd. *The Mystery Unveiled: The Truth about the Borden Tragedy*. Providence: J.A. & R.A. Reid, 1893.
(Transcripts 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 10, 11, and 12 ©2002 Dr. Stefani Koorey.)

Maynard F. Bertolet

FALL RIVER HISTORICAL SOCIETY NEWS

By Dennis A. Binette

(Editor's note: This article is reprinted from "The Fall River Historical Society Report," Volume 13, Number 1, Fall, 2001, with the permission of "The Fall River Historical Society" Curator, Mr. Michael Martins. The author, Mr. Dennis A. Binette, is the Assistant Curator of the Society. The "Fall River Historical Society" has many Borden-related items that are extremely rare. Borden collectors and scholars can always find important research items there.)

NEW ADDITION TO BORDEN COLLECTION

In a collection of items recently donated to *The Fall River Historical Society* was a small volume which, despite its size, ranks as a very important addition to the collection of artifacts and manuscripts relating to Miss Lizzie A. Borden.

In 1893, *The Fall River Tragedy* by Edwin H. Porter (1864 - 1904) was published, with copies being sold by subscription. *The Fall River Historical Society*, already in possession of the subscription sample owned by Porter, which was believed to be the only one extant, was pleased to discover this, a second copy, once the property of George Robert Hume Buffington (1896-1917). Buffington, a Fall River, Massachusetts native, had worked for the *Fall River Daily Globe* as business manager for a time during Porter's tenure there, leaving the paper in 1893 to enter the employ of a competitor. That same year, Buffington served as publisher for Porter's controversial work.

This volume, bound in hunter green cloth, bears the title "HISTORY OF THE BORDEN MURDERS. ILLUSTRATED." stamped in gilt on the front cover. On the reverse side, interestingly enough, is a gilt-stamped facsimile of what was intended to appear on the spine, the title and author's name, with Greek key ornamentations at the top and bottom, the latter of which are absent in the finished work. Upon first examining the contents, one would suppose that this volume was defective, containing only forty-eight pages and ending mid-way through "Chapter IX." But, at the rear of the book can be found the subscription sheets intended for listing pre-publication orders. As salesmen's samples are often diminutive versions of the actual product, so, too, is this abbreviated "Tragedy."

There are some differences between the subscription copy and the complete book, one being the presence of a portrait of Andrew J. Borden as the frontispiece in the former, where in the latter, this image appears much later in the volume, following page fifty-one. In the complete work, no illustration appears opposite the title page, but instead, the two pages following it bear photographs of the interior and exterior of the courthouse at New Bedford, Massachusetts, scene of the trial. James A. Walsh's postmortem views of the Bordens are also included in the early pages of the sample, when they actually occur later in the full-length work. It is likely that, since the smaller volume was intended to sell copies of the larger, the more sensational images were moved "up front" so as to be included.

(Continued on Page 8)

THE BIBLIOGRAPHIC BORDEN

By Lisa Zawadzki

Hello again, loyal readers. In this issue, I thought I would continue with the theme that I began with last October. Namely, I thought I would recount a few more of my favorite things. I promise you I will not start singing like Julie Andrews. That would be a real crime. And goodness knows we have enough of that sort of thing around here. So, let's get started, shall we?

As a reference librarian, I naturally have an affinity for a good reference book. Leonard Rebello's *Lizzie Borden Past & Present: A Comprehensive Reference to the Life and Times of Lizzie Borden* isn't just good. It is a great reference book. Massive in scope, this work holds more information about the case and Miss Borden than you ever thought possible. And unlike many reference books, it is also great fun to just sit and browse

through as well. Interesting information, pictures, and documents tumble from every well-researched page. If you follow my column at all, you too will love this book. It is crammed with more bibliographic citations than I could ever dream of providing for you. The amount of work and research that went into this must have been tremendous. It is also blessed with the librarian's best friends: a good index and table of contents. A casual reader would likely be quite overwhelmed by this, but then again casual readers probably wouldn't have a subscription to the *Lizzie Borden Quarterly*. So get this impressive book if you haven't already, and I assure you it will be a favorite of yours as well.



GREAT UNSOLVED CRIMES

Louis Solomon

Scholastic, Inc., 1976

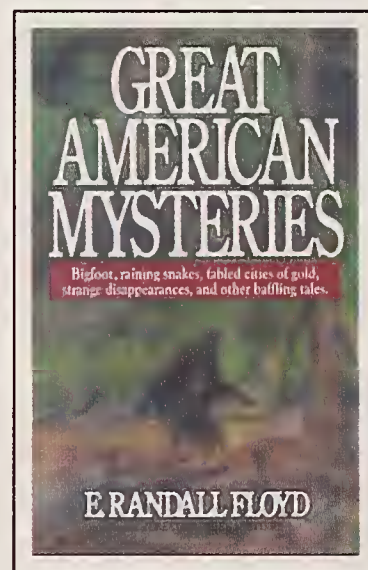
Contains: *The Ma & Pa Murders*
Lisa Zawadzki's first Lizzie reading

I also have an admiration for children's books. I am usually happily surprised and impressed by the quality of this type of book produced on the case. Many of them are more clearly written and explained than the adult books that I read. Considering their intended audience, they often cover obscure or complex issues well without being overly simplistic or leaving out valuable information.

Still, my choice for favorite children's book is a sentimental one. Louis Solomon's essay "The Ma & Pa Murders" appeared in *The Ma & Pa Murders and Other Perfect Crimes* and in the paperback *Great Unsolved Crimes*. That little paperback was the first item that I ever read on Lizzie Borden and her famous murders. I probably was intrigued that something so famous and mysterious happened so near to where I lived. This extended essay was perhaps not the most balanced in the world, but it was well written all the same. The author took the time to include detailed information to back up his arguments. Solomon was clearly influenced by Radin, and believed Miss Lizzie to be innocent. He was objective enough though to note the inconsistencies and conflicts within the events. Somehow this book sparked something in my imagination, and I have pursued Miss

Lizzie and the great mystery around her many happy years. For that, this book in both paperback and hardcover, will always have an honored place on the *Bibliographic Borden* bookshelves.

Of course, quality writing and accuracy are all well and good. But that can get dull. If I were to elect a favorite bad example, I would have to go with that incomparable hack E. Randall Floyd. Above I said that most children's books were of impressive quality. There was a reason for that qualification and old E. Randall is it. Despite having written essays on this subject in two different books, he can never seem to get his facts straight. When I read the first piece "Lizzie Borden Took an Axe" from *Great American Mysteries* I actually wondered if it were fiction. I made a list of inaccuracies at the time and came up with almost two

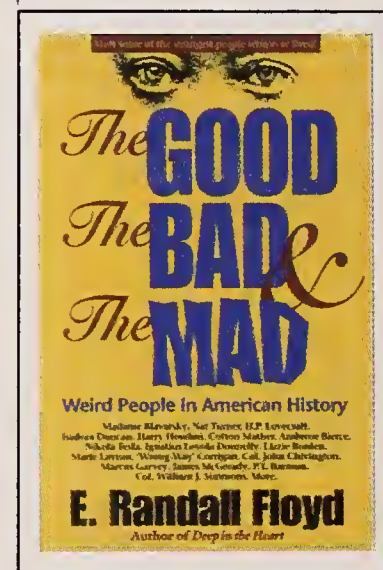


GREAT AMERICAN MYSTERIES

E. Randall Floyd

August House, 1991

Contains:
Lizzie Borden Took an Axe



THE GOOD, THE BAD & THE MAD

E. Randall Floyd

Harbor House, 1999

Contains: *Lizzie Borden: And When She Saw What She Had Done*

FAVORITE BAD EXAMPLES

dozen. Quite an accomplishment in a four-page essay! His next attempt was a little bit better. The piece "Lizzie Borden: And When She Saw What She had Done" from the book *The Good, The Bad, & The Mad: Weird People in American History* had fewer mistakes. Still, E. Randall managed to contradict himself on the same page, giving two different dates for the crime. Oh, well.

In conclusion, I have to note what I feel to be the best opening line of anything I have ever read on the Borden murders. Eleanor Early, in her wonderful nasty effort "Did Lizzie Do It?" from the book *A New England Sampler* gave us a memorable opener. She recounted, and I quote, "Lizzie Borden was thirty-two years old, and she had a jaw like a nutcracker." Wow! This particular article was also graced with the most unflattering rendition of Miss Borden in existence. It looked nothing like her and is absolutely ghastly. I believe I originally observed that Lizzie ended up looking like "Margaret Hamilton having a really bad day". I stand by those words.

That's all for now. I'll see you in the next issue.

By Neilson Caplain

THE MAKING OF LIZZIE'S WORLD

In Lizzie Borden's day Cotton was King. There were in Fall River no less than forty mill corporations, spewing forth endless miles of fabric for calico printing. Enormous cotton mills, five or six stories in height and a block long, with the exterior walls framed by granite quarried from the bedrock of the city, dotted every section of town. Whole neighborhoods were built around them. Even downtown, where Lizzie lived, there were several mills located within a half mile from her house on Second Street.

On that dreadful day of August fourth, rumors of murder spread quickly. Nearby mills were forced to close down as curious workers deserted their machines and thronged to the scene of the crime.

Lizzie woke early every week-day morning to the sound of bells summoning laborers to work in the hot, humid and noisy cotton factories. She heard the same sounds as evening approached and weary workers ended the day's toil. All that went on in the city revolved about the cotton industry. That was the world into which Lizzie was born.

Lizzie felt isolated from the tribulations of the working class. She was a Borden. It was her relatives, together with the Durfees and Braytons, who controlled the mill companies and therefore the social and cultural amenities in town. She felt isolated as well from those influential relatives, and it was envy that led to malaise with her situation in that modest home on Second Street, far from the nice residential part of the city.

Whence came that mighty industrial empire, that concentration of wealth in the hands of but a few families? Some say it all began with the achievements of one man, Holder Borden, singled out from among the many Bordens that inhabited the town of Troy, later to become the town of Fall River, the place in which Lizzie Borden was born, lived and died. Herewith the story of that industrial pioneer.

Lizzie and Holder had a common ancestor, John Borden, whose father was that Richard who came to America in 1636. The Fall River Borden families are descended from John's two sons, Richard and Joseph. Lizzie's lineage is traced to Richard Borden, while Holder is descended from the Joseph line. Thus the two are cousins, albeit far distant ones.

Holder's father was George Borden, his mother Phoebe, first cousins. Phoebe's brothers were Richard and Jefferson Borden who would later join Holder in his business ventures. Holder was born in 1799. At that time there were but eighteen dwellings in town, nine occupied by Bordens. Holder was only seven years old when his father died in 1806 leaving his widow, one son and three young daughters. Running the family farm on the eastern extremity of Fall River proved too much for the widow. She moved her family to the Fall River center where she opened an inn, called the *Mansion House*. It was located on Central Street, west of Main, and was the only tavern in town. There young Holder, in pursuit of his duties, mixed with the gentry, and from them learned the way of the world and the intricacies of cotton cloth manufacture.

Three years after George died, Phoebe married Bradford Durfee, also a first cousin and only eleven years older than his step-son. Mr. Durfee was destined to play an important part in

the businesses that Holder later developed.

The intermarriages of first cousins may have accounted for the early demise of Holder as well as the childhood deaths of the two daughters born to Bradford and Phoebe. Bradford's father and grandfather had married Bordens, it was no wonder that he did too.

Imagine that Lizzie and her sister were wooed and won by such nearby cousins. There would not have been any axe murder then. Andrew and Abby would serenely spend their declining years in the house on Second Street, and still would have no electric lights or running hot water. Happy to have the girls out of the house, Andrew would hire Southard Miller to build them big homes in the choicest part of town. Emma's children, delivered by the good Doctor Seabury Bowen, would romp with Lizzie's cats and dogs. Lizzie would have big parties, inviting as her guests the elite of Fall River and actresses like Nance O'Neil, to the approbation of Emma and the ladies of the church. And there would be no unsolved crime to intrigue you and me.

Back to reality! In 1828 the *Mansion House* was converted to living quarters and became known as the house of Major Bradford Durfee. His title of Major, as well as Richard Borden's title of Colonel, was acquired in the Fall River militia, formed for the War of 1812 but which saw no active service. Shortly after Phoebe died, Bradford Durfee married pretty Mary Brayton. Just a year later he lost his life from over-exertion in the Fire of 1843, which devastated the entire central part of town.

Alice Brayton wrote that Holder was small as a youth and puny. S. Angier Chace said that he was a small boy, smaller than the average at that age, but in maturity he grew in stature and development. The historian Henry H. Earl maintained that he was tall and slim. Further, Earl wrote, he was constantly planning, not much of a talker, slow and deliberate in speech and of little patience. He was of dark complexion, bearded, a careful dresser, great smoker of cigars, an ardent horse lover, nervous disposition and any inaccuracy or inattention was sure to excite his displeasure.

Holder never married, perhaps because of a failed and tragic love affair. Although he did not lack proposals from ambitious daughters, "no affectionate shafts touched his heart."

He poured his grief and energy into work and family. His three sisters each married first cousins of Major Durfee. Ever mindful of family obligation, in the early 1840's Holder built for them, and for his mother, imposing mansions on the Hill. He was a lad of fourteen when the first cotton cloth company in Fall River was formed in 1813. Two years later he was named Clerk of the company store. Alice Brayton said that not long afterwards, perhaps with tongue in cheek, he ran everything else in Fall River too. In any case, the Borden family later acquired a major interest in that mill and one that followed next year, *The Troy Cotton and Woolen Manufactory*. Holder's career in the business of cotton cloth manufacture and printing began with his employment in cotton mills in the Providence area. Opportunity knocked with his appointment as the Agent for the Brown brother's *Blackstone Mill*. In those days, an Agent was analogous to today's Chief Operating Officer.

(Continued on Page 20)

THE WHITEHEAD HOUSE DISCOVERED

By Leonard Rebello

(Editor's note: Here we go again! Leonard Rebello, as we all know, wrote "Lizzie Borden: Past & Present", referred to by Lisa Zawadzki as "a great reference book. Massive in scope [and] holds more information about the case and Miss Borden than you ever thought possible." We can only concur!)

Mr. Rebello, working in tandem with William Pavao, (see this issue's headline article) has discovered the location of the Whitehead home. The Rebello and Pavao articles mesh together and compliment each other perfectly.)

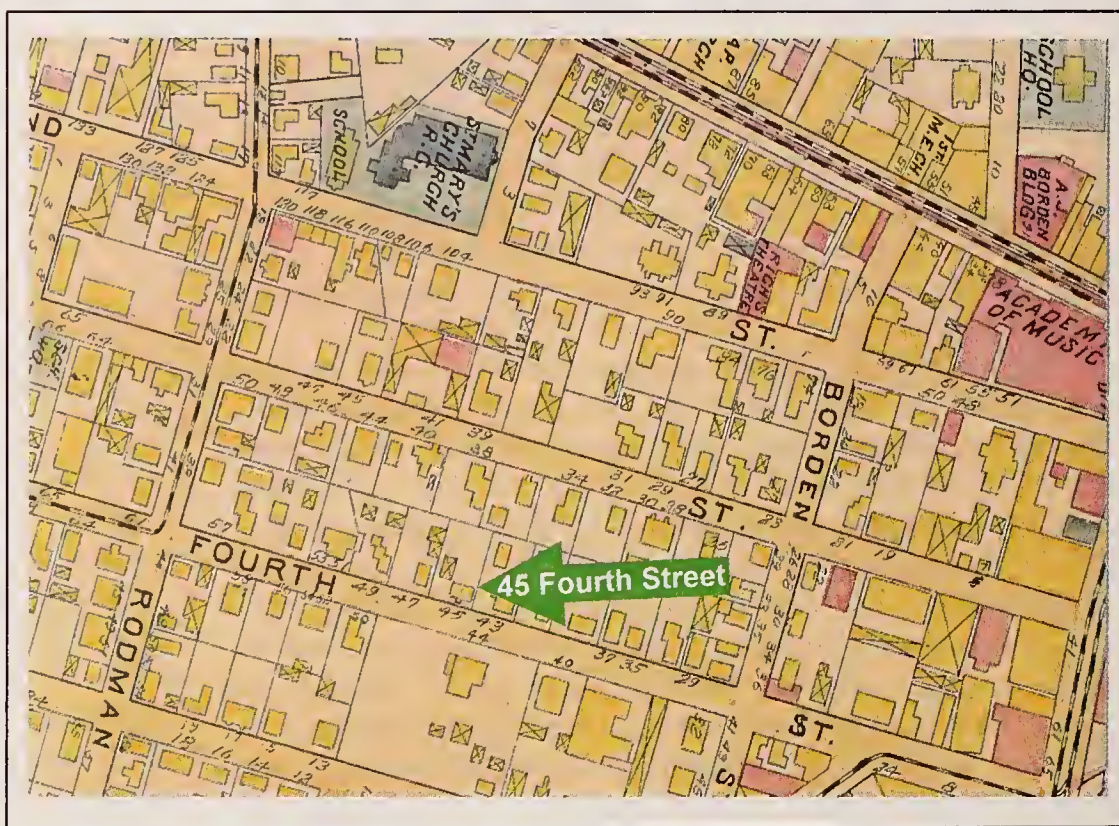
Documenting the existence of the Fourth Street property was a challenge that William Pavao, curator at the *Lizzie Borden Bed & Breakfast/Museum*, and I had had for a long time. Both of us visited what we initially thought was the site of the Whitehead house. This site was quickly eliminated when we viewed old city maps and street addresses on Fourth Street. We walked up and down Fourth Street several times checking and verifying addresses and houses we thought may have been 45 Fourth Street.

Scrutinizing an 1895 map of Fall River, we soon discovered that Spring Street ended at Second Street and did not connect to Fourth Street until 1900. The street was extended and graded by 1901.¹ This discovery stirred our imaginations as we both visualized Abby Borden, who frequently visited the Whitehead's house, carrying her mince pies sprinkled with rosewater.²

Armed with additional maps, street addresses, census records, land records, and files in hand, we located the site at the corner of Fourth and Spring Streets. It was the same lot that Mrs. Abby Borden Whitehead Potter (1884-1974), Abby Borden's niece, viewed in 1972 with Judge Robert Sullivan, author of *Goodbye Lizzie Borden*. "Mrs. Potter was delighted to find that 45 Fourth Street was in remarkably good condition, for the attractive small dwelling was where she [Mrs. Potter] had been born, raised and where her mother, Mrs. [Sarah] Whitehead, had been raised, married, and lived her entire life.³ However, the property Mrs. Potter, Judge Sullivan, Bill, and I stood directly in front of had two houses on the same lot. One house was a rather large three-family house and the other was a much smaller cottage duplex. There was another small two-family home in the same area, but in the next lot. Our Fourth Street mission became more complex as all properties in Fall River were renumbered in 1895. Which of the three houses were once owned by Oliver and Jane Gray, Sarah Whitehead, and Abby Durfee Gray Borden? What house were Abby Potter and Judge Sullivan looking at the day they visited Fall River? We needed to find, see, and document the house that caused such a negative rift between Andrew and Abby Borden and Emma and Lizzie.⁴ Bill, the historian and educator, decided that the small cottage, set back some distance from the sidewalk was correct while I felt the larger three-family house was the Whitehead home. Mrs. Potter's description was inconclusive. We needed more specific information that would provide us with the documentation to verify which house at 45 Fourth Street belonged

to the Whiteheads.

The history of the property shows that Abby Borden's father, Oliver Gray (1801-1878),⁵ a blacksmith, purchased the house at 31 Fourth Street, later renumbered 45 Fourth Street, in April 1857 from Ezra Marble.⁶ Abby Durfee Gray (1828-1892) was 29, at home and unmarried. Priscilla Gray (1820-1894), Abby's older sister may have been married by the time her father purchased the house. Three years later, his wife, Sarah Sawyer Gray (1795-1860), a 65-year-old "manufacturer"⁷ and housekeeper, died of consumption. His second wife was Jane Eldredge Baker Gray (1827-1916) the young widow of Obed Eldredge who was lost at sea in 1857. Oliver, age 61, and Jane, age 35, were married at Central Congregational Church on May 8, 1862.⁸ Two years later Jane gave birth to Sarah Bertha Gray (1864-1932). Mrs. Gray had two young children from a previous marriage when she married Abby Borden's father: Lucy J. Eldredge (1854-1939) who later married Elisha Cahoon (1848-1937), a cabinet maker and a carpenter at the Fall River Iron Works; a son, Henry Eldredge (1850-1882), who died of consumption at the age of 32. In 1878 Oliver Gray died leaving his property to his second wife, Jane and their daughter Sarah Bertha Gray. Oliver's oldest daughter, Priscilla Gray Fish (1820-1894) of Hartford, Connecticut, and Abby Gray Borden (1828-1892) were each left \$200. Priscilla was also given a feather bed and a large engraved silver spoon.⁹



THE WHITEHEAD HOUSE LOCATION

City of Fall River Map, 1895

Photograph from the Leonard Rebello Collection

Mrs. Gray's daughter, Sarah, married George W. Whitehead in 1882. The Whiteheads had two children: Abby Borden Whitehead (1884-1974) who later married Charles E. Potter, and George O. Whitehead (1887-?). It was in April of 1882 that Jane Gray's son, Henry, died of consumption.¹⁰

(Continued on Page 20)

LIZBETH'S CAUSE: THE ANIMAL RESCUE LEAGUE

By Denise Noe

(Editor's note: After too long an absence, we welcome back Miss Denise Noe, a veteran author and frequent contributor to these pages. The good news is that Ms. Noe will be favoring us with subsequent articles about the life and times of Miss Lizzie Borden. Welcome back Denise!)

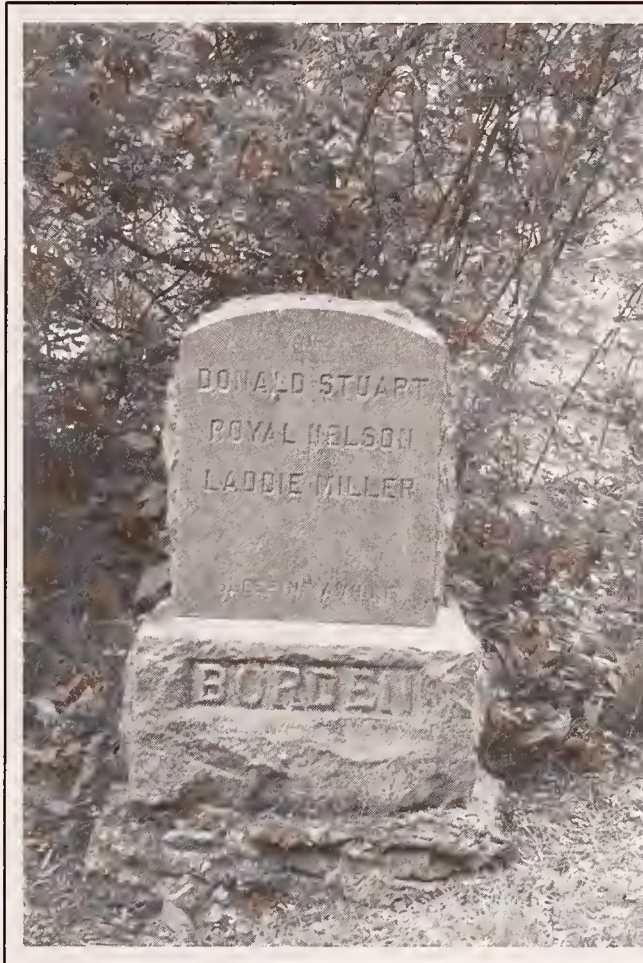
The primary beneficiary of Lizabeth A. Borden's will was the *Animal Rescue League*. At her death in 1927, Miss Borden left thirty thousand dollars, plus her share of stocks in the *Stevens Manufacturing Company*, to the *Animal Rescue League of Fall River*.¹ She bequeathed an additional two thousand dollars to the *Animal Rescue League of Washington, D.C.*² The reasons behind these generous bequests are concisely summed up in the will itself. "I have been fond of animals," Miss Borden writes, "and their need is great and there are so few who care for them." The *Animal Rescue League* cared for them then and continues to care for them today. Animal Rescue Leagues throughout the country provide shelter for homeless cats, dogs, and other small animals and seek adoptive homes for them. The League tries to make certain that it adopts out only animals in good health and with non-aggressive temperaments. Volunteers at ARLs walk dogs and play with the various animals to provide the exercise, affection, and attention necessary for the animals' health.

Gertrude Baker and Helen Leighton founded the *Fall River Animal Rescue League* in 1913. Leighton was the President of the organization and Baker the Treasurer for many years. Leighton was a librarian and a good friend of Lizabeth Borden, one of the few people who visited Miss Borden regularly after her acquittal. It seems likely that their shared love and concern for animals helped shore up their friendship. Lizabeth's will included a generous personal bequest to Leighton of a share in the A. J. Borden Building together with jewelry and furnishings.

In a report issued by the *Animal Rescue League of Fall River* in 1917, "Miss Helen Leighton," "Miss E. L. Borden," and "Miss L. A. Borden," are all listed as Life Members of the organization. The leaflet also states that "Life Memberships have been taken in memory" of three deceased dogs: Donald Stuart Borden, Royal Nelson Borden, and Laddie Miller Borden.² All three animals belonged to Miss Borden and are buried, along with an appropriate tombstone, in the Pine Ridge Cemetery, Dedham, Massachusetts. Chiseled just below the three dog's names are the words "Sleeping Awhile," perhaps allowing us a glimpse of another side of her personality.³

Today's *Fall River Animal Rescue League* runs the *Sylvan Animal Clinic* that does spaying and neutering and is available to the general public, by appointment only, for such diverse animal health needs as check-ups, heartworm tests, worming, dental care, and flea control. The *Sylvan Animal Clinic* says that its "fees are about half" of those usually charged at a full-service animal hospital.

Purrs & Paws is the name of the newsletter put out by the *Fall River Animal Rescue League*. It features reports on the shelter and the *Sylvan Clinic*, stories of successful animal adoptions, tributes to people who have donated to the ARL, an "ask the vet" column, and a variety of interesting animal-related news. There are many heartwarming photographs of happy folks with their furry companions throughout *Purrs & Paws*.



SLEEPING AWHILE

The Lizabeth Borden Pets' Final Resting Place

Photograph Courtesy of:
Messrs. Edward Thibault and Leonard Rebello

The *Washington Animal Rescue League* (WARL) was founded in 1914 primarily to aid the city's horses. As the automobile displaced equine transportation, its focus naturally shifted to dogs and cats.

As is true at any Animal Rescue League, people can adopt pets from the *Washington Animal Rescue League* and get advice on the care of domestic animals. It runs a Medical Center that provides low-cost care to the pets of low-income people and is the only

full-service veterinary facility of its kind on the East Coast. WARL boasts a worker named Marquette Nelson who is known for his extraordinary rapport with cats and had an article in the *Washington Post* devoted to his winning ways with the felines. WARL has a 750-square-foot play area for the exclusive use of its canines. Each Fall, WARL holds a benefit in which big-name celebrities such as Stephanie Powers have appeared to help raise money to aid animals. It publishes a newsletter entitled *Animal Report* that brings the reader up close to League activities and has pictures and descriptions of animals up for adoption. Lizabeth Borden was right when she said that the need of animals is great. It remains so today. People who care for animals and want to give of their time or money to our four-footed friends, as well as those looking for a compatible pet, would do well to look into their nearest Animal Rescue League.

SOURCE REFERENCES

1. *Last Will and Testament of Lizzie Andrew Borden*, bequeathed item number 4.
2. *Last Will and Testament of Lizzie Andrew Borden*, bequeathed item number 27.
3. *Animal Rescue League of Fall River*, 1917 annual report.
4. *Paying Respect to Lizzie's Departed Pets*, by Ed Thibault, *Lizzie Borden Quarterly*, Volume I, Number 1, January 1983, Page 5.

LIZZIE BORDEN IN THE SPOTLIGHT, ONCE AGAIN

By Neilson Caplain

(Editor's note: We are blessed this issue by having two articles by the Grandmaster of "Bordenania." Mr. Caplain brings us up to date on "Lizzie Borden Quarterly" subscriber, and Playwright, Christopher McGovern, and his creation, the Play "Lizzie Borden." We had previously reported on the Play's premiere in the October 1998 issue on pages 18 and 19.

Your Editor was invited to be a roundtable participant discussing the case following the first performance, however, time and stance did not allow this to happen. Be that as it may, our former Publisher, Mr. Jules Ryckebusch, did attend, and had a wonderful time!)

In the compendia of crime no family murder has endured in the public consciousness as long and as prominently as the Lizzie Borden case.

The latest reminder of that gruesome morning comes in the form of a musical named, understandably, "Lizzie Borden." It was staged in East Haddam, Connecticut by *Goodspeed Musicals* at the *Norma Terris Theater*. It appeared for most of the month of November. The news release of October 11, a copy of which was graciously sent to me by Jennifer Wislocki, reads, "An unspeakable crime. An unthinkable suspect. A creative excursion into the mind of Lizzie Borden comes to musical life."

The book and lyrics were written by Christopher McGovern, who spent a year in researching the Borden murders. As quoted in an interview in the *Providence Journal*, Mr. McGovern expressed the hope that the musical would wind up on Broadway, as had at least fifteen previous productions originating in this theater. Lizzie fans would be entranced and thrilled to witness that dream's realization.

To quote from the Providence newspaper, "Though McGovern takes some dramatic license with the facts, he sticks pretty close to the events of August 4, 1892 in the Borden house, 92 Second St., Fall River."

Further, "What is left is a portrait of a tormented woman, unhappy in her household, unhappy with her station in life --- a woman, as McGovern sees it, on the verge of murder --- though he delves deeply into Lizzie's dark side, he hopes to humanize somebody who's often been lumped in with Jack the Ripper."

The musical play, starring Christiane Noll, consists of two acts, the first containing twelve scenes, and the second, nine. The characters represented include two names familiar to Fall Riverites, Brayton and Durfee, leading families in the Fall River of that day, not in reality connected to the Borden murders.

The scenes are laid in the Courtroom, the Borden house, the Brayton house, and the Taunton jail. Act Two, Scene 9 is *The Courtroom Verdict* and the finale is *Epilogue, Maplecroft, Fall River: The House on the Hill*. Certain to engender discussion and expression of various viewpoints, the author engaged in talkbacks with the audience after the performance on Thursday nights.

FALL RIVER HISTORICAL SOCIETY NEWS

(Continued from Page 3)

It seems ironic that today, one-hundred-and-eight years after its publication, the salesman's copy belonging to the publisher has

GOODSPEED MUSICALS
at
THE NORMA TERRIS THEATRE
presents

LIZZIE BORDEN

Book and Lyrics by
CHRISTOPHER MCGOVERN and AMY POWERS

Music by
CHRISTOPHER MCGOVERN

with

BRIDGET BEIRNE DANICA CONNORS BRENDA CUMMINGS

ANDY GALE ELEANOR GLOCKNER TIM JEROME

MISCHA KISCHIKUM DARREN MATTHIAS MACKENZIE MAUZY CHRISTIANE NOLL

TALLY SESSIONS TINA STAFFORD MELINDA TANNER GWENDOLYN WALKER

Scenery Designed by
MICHAEL ANANIA

Costumes Designed by
DALE DIBERNARDO

Lighting Designed by
PAUL MILLER

Sound Designed by
JAY HILTON

Production Manager
R. GLEN GRUSMARK

Production Stage Manager
BRADLEY G. SPACHMAN

Technical Director
JASON W. HARSHAW

Musical Direction by
WILLIAM J. THOMAS

Assistant Musical Director
BRIAN ALVERSON

Casting by
WARREN PINCUS and
CAROL HANZEL

Directed by
BILL CASTELLINO

GOODSPEED MUSICALS

SUE FROST
Associate Producer

MICHAEL P. PRICE
Producer

MICHAEL O'FLAHERTY
Music Director

Nov. 1-25, 2001

2001 Season Sponsored by The Norma Terris/Albert D. Firestone Foundation

2001 SEASON

9

now joined that of the author in the *Fall River Historical Society's* collection. Easily taken to be defective because of its incompleteness, this piece of history was not discarded. Interestingly, a note from the donor was tucked inside the volume which read: "Do you know why this stops here? Could it be faulty binding and G.R.H. Buffinton just kept it?" But it was much more than the curiosity of a "faulty binding" that caused this small book to survive the years, and fortunately, it will now be preserved as a part of the *Fall River Historical Society's* ever-growing Borden archive.

MORE MEDIA EXPOSURE

Interest in the Borden case never seems to wane, and steadily, requests are received in the archive for materials to be used for various programs. Most recently, The *History Channel* worked with the Society preparing for a segment of *This Week in History* which will deal with the Borden murders. Cosgrove/Meurer Productions, Inc. has also made use of photographs from the Borden archive in preparing a segment of their series, *Unsolved Mysteries*. Robert Rose, Director of Special Products for WJAR television, worked in the archive last fall preparing his segment for WJAR's program, *Biography*.

THE TRIAL TESTIMONY OF MR. JOHN VINNICUM MORSE - PART TWO

PERMISSION TO TRANSCRIBE OFFICIAL BORDEN TRIAL TRANSCRIPT EXCERPTS WAS GRANTED TO THE LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY ON FEBRUARY 11, 2000
PERMISSION WAS GRANTED BY THE OFFICE OF JUDGE SUSAN DEL VECCHIO, CHIEF JUSTICE OF THE MASSACHUSETTS SUPERIOR COURT

Q. Was any one except Mr. and Mrs. Borden in the house that you saw on the Wednesday night, when you returned?
A. No, sir, they were all there were there that I saw.

Q. Did you see Bridget Sullivan at all that night?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did you see Miss Lizzie Borden at all that night?
A. No, sir.

Q. When you entered the house, into which room did you go?
A. Sitting room.

Q. How long did you remain in the sitting room?
A. Well, if I got there at half past eight, I was there till a few minutes past ten.

Q. Who went to bed first?
A. Mrs. Borden.

Q. Which way did she go to go to bed?
A. She went out of the rear door, up the back stairs.

Q. Who next went to bed?
A. Mr. Borden and me both left at the same time,--left the room.

Q. Had you heard anyone before you went to bed?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Won't you describe what you heard before you went to bed?
A. I heard some one come to the front door, open it, went in, went upstairs, went into Lizzie's room, shut the door.

Q. Did you see the person who went up stairs into Miss Lizzie's room?
A. I did not.

Q. In which room did you go when you went to bed?
A. The guest chamber up stairs. It is in the northwest corner of the house.

Q. Directly over the parlor?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. That is the room in which Mrs. Borden was found dead next day?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. When you got up stairs did you notice anything with respect to the door leading into the prisoner's room?
A. It was closed.

Q. Do you know whether it was locked or not?
A. I do not.

Q. You slept all night, I suppose, in that room?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. In the guest room. Do you recall whether your door was open or not during the night's sleep?
A. It was open.

Q. Did anything occur until you arose in the morning?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did you see any person or hear any person?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did you bring with you, Mr. Morse, any luggage, baggage of any kind,--hand bag, or anything of that sort?
A. No, sir.

Q. What time did you get up in the morning?
A. About six o'clock.

Q. You dressed, of course?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And went down stairs?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you recall whether you left the door of the room in which you had slept open or shut?
A. Open.

Q. By the way, did you have occasion to go into that room again before you went away on Thursday?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did you notice anything with respect to Miss Lizzie Borden's room when you got up?
A. I did not.

Q. Was the door open or closed?
A. Closed.

Q. Into which room did you go when you got up and went down stairs on the Thursday morning?
A. Sitting room.

MR. ROBINSON. May it please your Honors, we may say with perfect propriety with the counsel for the Commonwealth that we have agreed that the witnesses who have not testified on either side might be excluded from the room during the testimony of witnesses. We concur in that and we think it right in order to arrive at a right conclusion. It may have been carried out thus far. I do not know whether it has or not.

MR. KNOWLTON. It has been, strictly.

MASON, C. J. Do you desire that the order be without exceptions, -- including professionals as well as other witnesses?

MR. ROBINSON. I understand that the government desires to have some exceptions made.

MR. KNOWLTON. Yes, sir. I think it is a very proper order in itself. We have two witnesses who happen to be actively engaged in reporting for the newspapers in Fall River, however, whom we desire to except from the order, Messrs. Manning and Stevens. I have told our friends on the other side practically what they will testify to and they have agreed that they need not be excluded. I never knew the order to include witnesses who are purely professional, who were to testify on matters of opinion only. We should not care to

(Continued on Page 23)

ABBY DURFEE BORDEN:

(Continued from Page 1)

Most have walked away frustrated at their inability to solve the crime due to the complete lack of physical evidence. Children have skipped rope to the Lizzie Borden jingle which has guaranteed Lizzie Borden, her parents and the murders a place in American history and culture.

Still, with all that has been written about the Borden case, we know precious little about the first victim, Abby Borden. We continue to wonder what a seemingly reclusive woman could have done to have earned herself a place on the murderer's chopping block.

Abby has been portrayed as the stereotypical evil step-mother whose only goal in life was to make the lives of her two step-daughters more of a living hell than it was already. She has been characterized as a fat, lazy, friendless woman who rarely left her house. This characterization of Abby is **without** any basis in fact. It is the result of one hundred years of legend and myth. Hollywood's negative depiction of Mrs. Borden has also served to hurt Abby's character. As a result of these **false** portrayals, we come to understand why someone would have wanted to kill Abby. The worst part is that we cannot blame this person for killing her! Therefore, these negative and false portrayals of Abby Borden have served as the basis for the motive which led to her murder.

Where did all of this negative characterization begin? It began and ended with the testimonies and actions of Emma and Lizzie Borden! Most historians who have studied the case continue to look upon Emma's and Lizzie's testimonies with suspicion. Yet, some continue to believe everything they said regarding their step-mother.

In rebuilding the character of Abby Borden to its accurate description, it is important for one to realize that Abby Borden was indeed a human being. She had feelings. She laughed and cried. She dreamed. She had fears. She experienced great joys and great sadnesses. She loved and desired to be loved as do all human beings. However, she lived her life in a seemingly loveless home which was strongly divided into two warring factions. She was a woman whose character has been damaged by over a century of lies and legend. Therefore, the true life of Abby Borden, the human being, deserves to be uncovered, understood and respected.

IN THE BEGINNING

Abby Durfee Gray was born on January 21, 1828¹ on Rodman Street² in Fall River, Massachusetts. She was the second child of Oliver Gray and his first wife, Sarah Sawyer. Abby's older sister, Priscilla, had been born in 1820. No documentation has yet been found to explain why Abby's parents gave her the middle name "Durfee."

Oliver Gray supported his family by working as a blacksmith and as a tin peddler "who sold sundries, china, linen and household goods from a pushcart in the Fall River Streets."³ Although to date, little information has been uncovered regarding Abby's childhood, I believe it is safe to assume that her family was not one of wealth given Oliver Gray's occupations. Did Abby go to school? Was she happy during her childhood? Did she have friends, perhaps beaux? These are things we may never know.

Sarah Sawyer Gray died on December 22, 1860. She was 66 years old at the time of her death. On May 8, 1862, Oliver Gray

married a widow, Jane (Baker) Eldredge at Central Congregational Church in Fall River. Jane Gray later gave birth to the couple's daughter, Sarah Bertha "Bertie" Gray in 1864. Abby was thirty-six years older than her new half-sister, but by all accounts, the two always had a close relationship more resembling that of mother and daughter rather than sisters. Sarah later testified that she was on "very good" terms with Abby, "more so, than anybody in the world."⁴

It is interesting to note that at this point in Abby's life, her existence was very similar to the eventual lives of her two future step-daughters, Emma and Lizzie Borden. Abby was in her late thirties and was considered a spinster (as were both Emma and Lizzie in 1892). It is safe to assume, that like Emma and Lizzie, Abby spent a great deal of her time at home during these years. She probably assisted in the care of her younger half-sister. Abby's matrimonial prospects may have been limited if non-existent.

"Shy, timid, reportedly of a generous and kindly disposition,

Abby was easy to please, even anxious to please."⁵

We can only wonder how Abby may have felt when the recently widowed Andrew Borden began to show interest in her. Was she excited? Did she fall in love? She must have known that Andrew was on his way to becoming a wealthy man.

Did Abby marry Andrew for his money? We may never know. She may have seen Andrew's proposal of marriage as an escape from spinsterhood and as a way to become a wife, mother, and mistress of a household of her own. Regardless of the reasons, Abby became Andrew's second wife on June 6, 1865. The couple apparently married in the parlor of the Gray household.⁶



SARAH ANTHONY MORSE BORDEN
Andrew Borden's first wife, c1860
September 19, 1823 - March 26, 1863

Reproduced courtesy of the
Fall River Historical Society

ABBY BORDEN AS A MOTHER

Andrew Borden's first wife, Sarah Anthony Morse had died on March 26, 1863 leaving Andrew with twelve-year-old Emma and Lizzie who was almost three years old. We can only imagine what life was like for Emma and Lizzie during the period following their mother's death. It is hard to imagine Andrew as the loving, nurturing and supportive parent which his two young daughters would have so desperately needed.

After Andrew and Abby had married they settled in the family's home at 12 Ferry Street in Fall River. It must have been difficult for Abby, as an outsider, to join an already existing family and household. The home at 12 Ferry Street was not Abby's home. It was the home of the recently deceased Sarah

Borden, natural mother to Emma and Lizzie. Abby must have felt (and rightfully so) uncomfortable in the home that Sarah had made for her family.

If Abby had imagined that her marriage to Andrew was a dream come true she must have been severely disappointed by her eventual existence within the family. Hiram Harrington (married to Andrew's only living sibling, Lurana) testified at the inquest that during Andrew's early marriage to Abby "everything was very, very pleasant, uncommonly so for a step-mother."⁷ Harrington did not state how long this "pleasant" existence lasted but he qualified his answer by stating that it was during the "early" period of the marriage.

We do **not** know whether Abby ever attempted to be a proper mother to her two step-daughters. Abby married Andrew knowing he had two daughters who needed a mother-figure in their young lives. We know Abby had a mother-daughter relationship with her half-sister, Sarah. Therefore, Abby was indeed capable of cultivating and sustaining such a relationship. It is logical to assume that Abby would have attempted, at first, to become a mother figure in the lives of Emma and Lizzie. The question is, why weren't her attempts accepted and/or successful?

Abby probably would have had an easier time creating a bonding relationship with Lizzie given Lizzie's young age. Emma, being fourteen and having had the responsibility of "baby Lizzie"⁸ for at least the previous two years, naturally must have resented Abby's presence and her attempts to assert her status in the home and with Lizzie. In essence, Emma had been the lady of the house and the "little mother."⁹ To Emma, Abby was now trying to take this role away from her. When Emma was at school during the day, Abby had Lizzie to herself. There would have been resentment and perhaps even hostility in the wake of Abby's marriage to Andrew. Emma clearly remembered her mother and probably was not happy with the addition of Abby (or anyone else for that matter) to the family in her mother's role.

Lizzie stated in her inquest testimony that she had called Abby "mother" from her youth until the 1887 incident involving the sale of Abby's half-sister Sarah's house (to be discussed later). As a spinster and probably visualizing a lonely, childless life prior to her marriage to Andrew, Abby must have been overjoyed when Lizzie called her "mother." She must have been equally crushed when years later Lizzie ceased to do so.

Emma remembered her natural mother and obviously had difficulty seeing anyone other than Sarah Borden as her mother. Therefore, Emma always insisted on calling Abby by her first name. It is possible that Emma, given her age and the memories she had of her mother, was given permission by her parents to call Abby by her first name. However, this seems unlikely in a Victorian-era family. Therefore, Emma's insistence of calling Abby by her first name may have demonstrated that to Emma, her relationship with Abby was one of equals, rather than that of a parent and a child. Abby had no chance of establishing a mother-daughter relationship with her eldest step-daughter.

Emma's relationship with Abby was by her own admission **not** cordial.¹⁰ She then stated that Lizzie's relationship with Abby was "more cordial" than was hers.¹¹ By her own admission, Emma really disliked her step-mother. Therefore, the tension between Abby and her two step-daughters was real.

Lizzie later admitted in her inquest testimony that she did not regard Abby as her mother.¹² Poor Abby. If Lizzie did not feel Abby was like a mother to her then how did Lizzie really feel

toward her step-mother? Lizzie testified in 1892 that her relationship with Abby was "cordial" but then this depended "upon one's idea of cordiality."¹³ She stated she and Abby were "friendly, very friendly" yet she did not "mean the dearest of friends in the world, but very kindly feelings and pleasant."¹⁴ Lizzie remarked, "I always went to my sister because she was older and had the care of me after my mother died."¹⁵

It seems a competition existed between Emma and Abby for the affections of young Lizzie with Emma the apparent victor. Emma must have been thrilled that Lizzie went to her rather than to Abby. Since Abby had taken Emma's role as lady of the house it must have pleased Emma immensely when Abby was not successful at winning Lizzie's affections. In this instance, Lizzie was a prize in a contest between Abby and Emma. Would Lizzie side with Abby, an outsider and the daughter of a tin peddler or would she side with her own sister Emma who had been made responsible for her care upon their mother's deathbed?¹⁶ It appears that Lizzie had to make a choice and that choice resulted in the exclusion of Abby from Lizzie's life and her heart.

According to her testimony given at the inquest, Emma spent a year and a half away at school sometime during her young life.¹⁷ She did not state when this took place or where she went to school. We can only assume that Abby breathed a sigh of relief when Emma left. Finally, the house would be peaceful. Perhaps, this was the reason behind Andrew sending Emma away to school. Abby must have been glad to have had Lizzie to herself without Emma's negative influence.

It is possible that Lizzie and Abby had managed to become somewhat closer in the year and a half during Emma's absence. Abby would have been the person to whom Lizzie came home from school and told her of her day. She would have cared for Lizzie when she was ill. Abby had more than a year without the cool rebuffs of her eldest step-daughter.

Abby may have dreaded the day when Emma eventually returned home. Perhaps she felt that Emma might have matured and relations within the family would now be better. Abby soon realized nothing had changed. Her relationship with Emma was still one defined by hostility and mutual jealousy.

It is interesting that Abby's life prior to her marriage closely mirrored the eventual lives of her two spinster step-daughters. One would think this would have made Abby more understanding of Emma's and Lizzie's position or vice versa. Perhaps Abby was sympathetic to them or perhaps she was not. The truth is that we do **not** know. We must of course consider Emma's statement that she and Lizzie had felt that Abby had not been interested in them.¹⁸

Mr. Horace Benson, a former school teacher of Lizzie's, stated that while living on Second Street, he "became acquainted with Mrs. Borden, whom he grew to know as a kindly-hearted, lovable woman, who tried, but ineffectively, to win the love of the stepdaughters."¹⁹

It seems as though Emma and Lizzie did not give Abby the chance to become interested in them. Abby was literally blocked by Emma in anything she tried to do. So perhaps, after trying for many years without any positive results, Abby simply gave up and retreated within herself. It is obvious the Borden sisters were extremely suspicious and jealous of their step-mother. Perhaps Abby grew tired of her step-daughters constantly second-guessing her every move in an attempt to discover a hidden motive. Again, perhaps Abby just gave up doing anything which involved her

step-daughters.

ANDREW BORDEN

Andrew Borden was truly a self-made man. However, Andrew had the reputation of being ruthless in his dealings with others as he climbed his way to wealth and prosperity. His reputation for miserliness was legendary. He started as a cabinet and furniture maker. He was working for Southard Miller as a cabinet maker at the time Miller was working on the construction of what would one day become Andrew's home at 92 Second Street. Andrew opened a retail furniture business and was also an undertaker. Andrew apparently saved his money and invested it wisely. He held vast tracts of valuable Fall River real estate including two farms in neighboring Swansea, Massachusetts. At the time of his death, Mr. Borden was "president of the Union saving's (sic) bank and director in the Durfee bank, Globe yarn, Merchants and Troy Mill. He was interested in several big real estate deals, and was a very wealthy man."²⁰ Andrew's estate was valued at approximately \$350,000.00 in 1892 dollars.²¹

In 1872, Andrew moved his family to 66 Second Street (which was later renumbered 92 Second Street in 1875). The family's new house was closer to Fall River's downtown business district. The Greek Revival style home had originally been a two-family tenement before Andrew had it converted into a single-family dwelling. Privacy was at a minimum in the home as there were no hallways running between the rooms. Each room, therefore, opened into the other.

The first floor of the house consisted of a front entry hall, a formal parlor, a sitting room, a dining room, and a kitchen with a separate pantry and sink room. The second floor consisted of a small room used as a closet by Emma and Lizzie, a guest chamber, Emma's bedroom, Lizzie's bedroom, and a suite of two rooms occupied by the elder Bordens. Mr. Borden had converted the second floor kitchen into a master bedroom for him and his wife along with a smaller room which was used as Mrs. Borden's dressing room. Emma and Lizzie also shared a suite of two bedrooms. As the older sister, Emma got the larger of the two rooms she and Lizzie would share. Lizzie's much smaller room led directly from Emma's. This arrangement is interesting and perhaps symbolic as it shows that in order for someone to get to Lizzie one would have to pass through Emma first. The third floor attic consisted of a small bedroom at the top of the stairs, a servant's bedroom, and an open area along with two large rooms used for storage.

The house was almost devoid of modern (according to the 1892 definition) conveniences. The only running water inside the house was in the sink room located inside the back entry and in the basement washroom. There was an additional faucet in the barn. A water closet was located in the basement as well as an outdoor privy in the barn. The individual family members kept slop pails and chamber pots in their rooms for nocturnal use. There were no tubs in the home. There was no telephone in the house, nor was the house connected to the gas lines for lighting purposes. Andrew preferred to use kerosene for lighting.

The Borden family did keep a servant. Interestingly, Andrew did very little else to create a lifestyle more in keeping with his financial status. Why would he spend the extra money to keep a servant? After all, there were three adult women living in the house, none of whom had substantial outside demands.

It appears that Abby Borden was the family member who

made the hiring decisions when it came to the family's servants. She would have been the person to whom the servant was responsible.

An ad in the *Fall River Evening News* from January 1873 read:

"WANTED - A girl to do general housework.
Apply to MRS. A.J. BORDEN,
66 Second St."²²

To what extent was Abby comfortable with Andrew's seemingly miserly ways? The truth is we do **not** know. Past historians have tended to see Andrew and Abby as two persons cut from the same cloth. However, this may not have been true. There is no evidence to suggest that Abby was or was not comfortable with the lifestyle of her family.



ABBY DURFEE GRAY BORDEN
Andrew Borden's second wife
January 21, 1828 - August 4, 1892

Reproduced courtesy of the
Fall River Historical Society

It is interesting to note that Andrew gave Abby, Emma and Lizzie the exact same weekly allowance, \$4.00 a week. Emma and Lizzie could send their allowances on personal items they wanted or needed. Abby spent her allowance on items the family needed such as "table coverings, toweling, and other small things for the house"²³ including the lace curtains she put in the parlor.²⁴

We do know that Emma and Lizzie (especially Lizzie) felt that the family should be living more within their prosperous means. The furniture in the house was old and out of style by 1892 standards. The lifestyle of the family must have become increasingly more embarrassing for Emma and Lizzie and therefore would have created greater desire and pressure for change.

The more fashionable neighborhood in Fall River was called "the Hill" and this was where the Borden girls longed to be. According to Alice Russell, "Mr. Borden was a plain-living man with rigid ideas, and very set. They were young girls. He had

earned his money, and did not care for the things that young women in their position naturally would."²⁵ She went on further to state that in her opinion, Mr. Borden did not appreciate the girls nor did he seem to understand why they would want anything different than they already had. She said Emma and Lizzie did complain about the family's lifestyle. She said Emma and Lizzie "had quite refined ideas, and they would like to have been cultured girls, and would like to have had different advantages."²⁶

Perhaps Abby also would have liked to have lived a "cultured" life and to have had a large house on the Hill. We can assume that she dreamed of having a fashionable home when Andrew began courting her. She knew Andrew had money and one can only imagine what Abby might have dreamed her life would have been like. It is reasonable to suggest that since Andrew controlled the money in the Borden house, he was the person who made the decisions concerning the household finances and therefore the family's lifestyle.

Emma and Lizzie, who would have preferred to have been living a more lavish lifestyle, saw their step-mother as a traitor against them in favor of Andrew. Abby's position does require some consideration. She was caught in the middle between her husband, her step-daughters and whatever her own thoughts or feelings may have been. She was Andrew's wife and a wife's role in that time period was to support and to follow the dictates of her husband. Perhaps Emma and Lizzie felt as though Abby always sided with Andrew to their (Emma's and Lizzie's) detriment.

THE FINAL BREAK

The final act of betrayal according to both Emma and Lizzie occurred in 1887 and this incident firmly sealed Abby's fate within the family. It was at this time that Abby's widowed step-mother, Jane Gray decided to sell her one-half share of the house which she shared with Abby's half-sister, Sarah Gray Whitehead and her family. This house was located at 45 Fourth Street in Fall River. According to his will, Abby's father, Oliver Gray had left the house to his wife, Jane and his daughter, Sarah.

When Mrs. Gray decided to sell her half of the house, Mrs. Borden became concerned for her half-sister, Sarah. Apparently, Abby felt that Sarah's husband, George Whitehead was not properly caring for his family and she did not want her sister and her family to lose their home.²⁷ Andrew purchased Mrs. Gray's one-half share of the property and put the deed in Abby's name. It seems completely natural that Abby would have wanted to help her own family and that Andrew would support her in this.

Emma and Lizzie heard of this land transaction from an "outsider,"²⁸ not from their parents. They must have been insulted to know that their parents kept this from them. The fact that Andrew and Abby felt they had to keep this land transaction a secret is revealing. It shows that there was already tension in the Borden family prior to 1887 and that money and/or property were heated topics in the Borden household. The sisters must have been incensed to know that Andrew's money went to help people who they considered to be beneath them.

Emma and Lizzie were furious when they learned about Andrew's purchase of 45 Fourth Street. They saw this act as definite proof that Abby was able to influence or control Andrew to some degree in matters of finance. They literally saw their collective futures disappearing before their eyes. If Abby indeed had some influence over Andrew involving his finances then perhaps she could persuade Andrew to leave his fortune entirely

to her and her family. Emma and Lizzie would therefore be left penniless. Perhaps Andrew would arrange it so Abby would have control over his fortune after his death. This would make Emma and Lizzie dependent upon the dictates of their seemingly evil step-mother as long as Abby lived. We can only imagine the thoughts which flowed through their minds as they sat barricaded in their second-floor bedrooms.

Lizzie later testified that she and Emma had felt that Abby had indeed "persuaded" Andrew to buy the property.²⁹ According to Emma, the sisters felt they (she and Lizzie) "ought to have some (property) too."³⁰ Lizzie stated that she personally told Abby that she and Emma should also be given something.³¹ Tensions in the house must have escalated considerably. Andrew's reaction to his daughters' cries of unfair and unequal treatment was to deed his father's two-family home at 12 Ferry Street to both Emma and Lizzie.

Emma and Lizzie continued to rent the Ferry Street property to tenants. Oddly, Andrew bought the property back from his daughters weeks before his murder for \$5,000.00. The fact that Andrew's daughters made him pay for the property which he had *given* to them speaks to the dysfunction of the interpersonal relationships within the family. It also shows Emma and Lizzie's selfishness when it came to money.

Apparently, getting their grandfather's house on Ferry Street did little to heal the rift in the Borden family as far as the girls were concerned. It was as a result of this entire affair which led Lizzie to stop calling Abby "mother" and to begin calling her "Mrs. Borden." Since Lizzie admitted she did not see Abby as her mother then, perhaps this was a natural result. However, in my mind, this shows great shallowness of character and vindictiveness on Lizzie's part. It shows that she was making a deliberate effort to hurt Abby in one of the only ways she knew she could. Therefore, we can infer it was important to Abby that Lizzie call her "mother" and that Lizzie got her revenge by ceasing to do so. To Lizzie, Abby was not her mother. She was merely a socially and financially inferior woman who had married her father.

In my estimation, there is no evidence of any apparent treachery on Abby's part in connection with the purchase of the Fourth Street property. She was Andrew's wife and had been for over twenty years at the time of the property transfer. This was the only property Mrs. Borden would ever own. The only unnatural part of this whole episode is the extreme reactions of the two Borden sisters.

One thing is definite, after 1887 the Borden sisters were not interested in their step-mother. They would not eat with their parents at meals if they could avoid doing so. They would barely speak to Abby. The two sisters sat in their rooms on the second floor attempting to ignore and avoid their parents. At one point Abby was ill and no one in the family would do as much as go to her with an assisting hand.

We can only wonder if Abby ever felt overwhelmed in her life or that perhaps marrying Andrew had been a mistake. She may never have felt this way. We really have no evidence as to the nature of Abby and Andrew's personal relationship. It is possible they were a loving couple. According to Lizzie, her parents were happily united³² and that as far as she "had any chance of judging" Andrew was affectionate toward Abby.³³ It is possible that they may have tried to have children. We know Andrew had fathered three children by his first wife (one of

whom, Alice Esther had died in infancy). Since he and Abby did not have any children together either they were not able to due to a fertility issue with Abby or perhaps they did not want any additional children other than Emma and Lizzie.

Abby made almost daily trips to the home of her half-sister, Sarah Whitehead and her family.³⁴ She often brought little gifts with her on these visits. Her niece and namesake, Abby Borden Whitehead Potter remembered her Aunt's freshly baked mince pies into which she had sprinkled rosewater.³⁵ Since Abby was not appreciated in her own home she spent more time in the home of the Whitehead family where she knew she was truly loved and genuinely welcomed. Finally, Abby had found a haven where she would not be constantly rebuffed or ignored. One can see why her relationship with her half-sister's family was so precious to her.

BRIDGET SULLIVAN: ABBY'S ALLY

Abby did have one known friend in the Borden household in Bridget Sullivan, the servant. Bridget was an immigrant from Ireland who was hired by the Bordens in November, 1889. Bridget was responsible for washing, ironing and cooking as well as "a little sweeping and scrubbing" which included sweeping the front entry every other Friday.³⁶ Bridget was not responsible for any of the rooms on the second floor. The only bedroom for which she was responsible was her own attic room.

Following the murders of Mr. and Mrs. Borden, Bridget was interviewed by Mrs. Nellie McHenry. This interview is extremely revealing in its description of Bridget's feelings toward Abby and the nature of the relationship that Abby had with her step-daughters. Bridget stated in the interview that "Mrs. Borden was always kind and good to her and would talk to her [and] tell her what she was going to do."³⁷ "Bridget often said that it was too bad Mrs. Borden was their stepmother (as) she was too good for them and they did not like her."³⁸

"She further stated that she made up her mind three times to leave their (sic) and gave in her notice but Mrs. Borden coaxed her to stay and once raised her wages. Mrs. Borden was so good that Bridget stayed but was intending to leave? (sic) she gave as her reason that while the work was not hard the place was not pleasant for any girl on account of the odd habits of the family she said things were not very pleasant in the house, I asked how it was, well the girls kept so much to themselves their (sic) was no love for their stepmother."³⁹

"The girls particularly Miss Lizzie was very difficult always keeping to themselves, and no one ever was allowed to go Miss Lizzie's room she took care of it herself."⁴⁰

A HOUSE DIVIDED

Emma and Lizzie mostly stayed upstairs in their rooms while they were home. The sisters used the second floor guest chamber as a sitting room in which to receive friends. This room also served as a sewing room. Emma testified that she was responsible for taking care of the parlor, her own bedroom, and that she and Lizzie both were responsible for the care of the guest chamber.⁴¹

Interestingly, Emma testified that Abby had charge of the management of the house.⁴² Emma then stated that Abby "filled the place of housekeeper" within the household.⁴³ It is obvious that in Emma's mind Abby was on the same level as a hired servant!!

One can only imagine how Abby must have felt doing her

daily chores on the first floor or in her bedroom while she wondered what her two step-daughters were doing upstairs. Abby obviously knew her step-daughters did not like or accept her. They made their feelings clear through their words and their



BRIDGET SULLIVAN

The Borden Maid

March, 1864 - March 25, 1948

Reproduced courtesy of the
Fall River Historical Society

actions. The behavior of Emma and Lizzie created a house which was filled with tension. They were obviously trying to make a statement.

Bridget stated that in regards to the guest chamber "she (Abby) never went there as she knew well she was not wanted."⁴⁴ It is difficult to imagine how Abby felt knowing she was not wanted nor welcome in certain areas of her own home! To be given the silent treatment from her step-daughters on a daily basis must have been both hurtful and frustrating.

Bridget also said "I did not know as Mrs. Borden ever done it (cleaning the guest chamber) before, excepting her own friends were their (sic)."⁴⁵

Bridget went to Abby for her daily instructions. Abby did the marketing as well as Bridget. Abby was responsible for planning the family's meals. She was responsible for the care of her bedroom and her dressing room. She may also have cleaned the sitting and dining rooms on a regular basis.

Abby has been described as lazy. One must remember that the Bordens employed a servant. We know Abby dusted the dining room as she was so occupied on the morning of her murder. We also know she made almost daily visits to the home of her step-sister's family and brought them pies she had baked.

Abby was 5'3", had black hair and at the time of her death weighed over 200 pounds. Today we understand that there are many reasons which can cause a person to put on excess weight. Perhaps obesity was an inherited trait in Abby's family. Perhaps Abby did not get regular exercise. It is known that for some overweight people food becomes like a drug or a friend. They turn to food whenever they are scared, depressed or lonely. Perhaps this was true in Abby's case. She may have turned to food to ease her sadness, loneliness or her boredom. It is time to really consider what may have been the true causes of Mrs. Borden's weight problem rather than faulting her for something she may not have been able to prevent.

MORE CONTRADICTIONS TO THE LEGEND

According to legend, Mrs. Borden was practically friendless. This is simply not true. Mrs. Southard Miller felt very strongly for Abby as evidenced in her comments made after the murders in which she stated that "she lost, in Mrs. Borden, the best and most intimate neighbor she had ever met."⁴⁶ Abby's close relationship with the Whiteheads was obviously important both to Abby and to her sister's family as well. As Bridget mentioned, Abby had friends who visited and spent the night in the guest chamber. Not only did Abby have good friends, but she also entertained these friends in her home for extended time periods. However, we do not know how often this occurred.

On the day of the murders, Lizzie stated that Mrs. Borden had received a note from a "sick friend" calling her away from the house. The existence of this note has been the subject of much debate. No one in 1892 said that since Mrs. Borden had no friends then there could never have been a note written or delivered. Since this logic was not used, it was known in 1892 that Mrs. Borden did have friends.

Mrs. Phoebe Bowen (wife of Dr. Seabury Bowen and daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Southard Miller) is another neighbor who also held Abby in high regard. She stated that on the day of the murders Bridget came to her house a second time to ask her to come over. She stated that when she arrived at the Borden home and learned of Mrs. Borden's death she let out a "sound."⁴⁷ She then had to go home as she was "not fit to stay."⁴⁸ Obviously, she was quite emotionally affected by the news of Abby Borden's death.

Another legend surrounding Abby Borden is that she rarely left the Borden house. This is also not true. She did the daily marketing for the family meals if Bridget did not go. Abby also visited the Whiteheads on an almost daily basis. Augusta Tripp testified at the inquest that she spent nearly a week in the Borden home in July 1891. During this week Mrs. Borden was not home. Augusta had been told that Abby was in Swansea.⁴⁹ Given this evidence, it can hardly be said that Mrs. Borden rarely left her house.

One of the reasons Mrs. Borden's character has been tarnished through the years is due to the testimonies of Emma and Lizzie. It seems that for years Lizzie did not have much else to do than to tell people of her dislike for her step-mother and that she and Emma had felt betrayed by their parents' purchase of the Whitehead house.

According to Lizzie's former school teacher Horace Benson, even at school Lizzie made it known that "she was never fond of her step-mother. She had no hesitation in talking about her, and

in many ways showed her dislike for her father's second wife."⁵⁰

Hannah Gifford was the dressmaker for Mrs. Borden, Emma and Lizzie. She made a dress for Lizzie in the spring prior to the murders. She stated at the Inquest that Lizzie referred to her step-mother as "a mean old thing."⁵¹ Lizzie also said that "we (Emma and Lizzie) dont (sic) have anything to do with her, only what we are obliged to" and "we dont (sic) always eat with the family, with them; sometimes we wait until they are through."⁵²

Following the murders, Officers Doherty and Harrington interviewed Miss Ida Gray of 27 Whipple Street. She told the officers that on Friday, August 5, she heard two ladies on the horse car talking about Lizzie. "One remarked that Lizzie said, when referring to Mrs. Borden, that "she was one of the kind that never die."⁵³

Hiram Harrington, who was married to Andrew's sister, Lurana, testified that Lizzie spoke in both a "sneeringly" and "unfriendly" manner about her step-mother.⁵⁴ Harrington, who was on friendly terms with everyone in the Borden home except Andrew, also said that Lizzie had complained about the situation regarding the Whitehead house.⁵⁵

Mrs. Borden showed herself to be more mature and lady-like than her two step-daughters. According to Sarah Whitehead, Abby "never used to say but very little about them (Emma and Lizzie); she was a woman that kept everything to herself."⁵⁶ She also stated that "whenever she, or any of Mrs. Borden's relatives, visited the house on Second Street, they were totally ignored by the girls, Lizzie and Emma."⁵⁷ Mrs. Whitehead said that she was not on friendly terms with the Borden sisters as she "always thought they felt above me."⁵⁸

Officer Harrington interviewed Mrs. Jane Gray, Abby's step-mother. She told him that "things were not as pleasant at the Borden house as they might be. That is the reason I did not call on Mrs. Borden as often as I would have liked to. I told Mrs. Borden I would not change places with her for all her money. What I know about them all is hearsay. Mrs. Borden was a very close-mouthed woman. She would bear a great deal, and say nothing."⁵⁹

COUNTDOWN TO MURDER

In July 1890, Lizzie left Fall River for a trip to Europe. She was gone for nineteen weeks. Now Andrew and Abby had only Emma in the house to contend with. Perhaps the house was quiet during Lizzie's absence. We only know that Lizzie eventually returned and the house was once again divided into warring factions. It was upon Lizzie's return that she and Emma switched bedrooms thereby giving Lizzie the larger of the two rooms.

On June 24, 1891, the Borden house was burglarized. This burglary is exceptionally interesting in that it occurred in the middle of the day with Emma, Lizzie and Bridget all in the house at the time. The thief ransacked only Abby's dressing room and desk, thereby demonstrating prior knowledge of the layout of the house and the location of certain valuables. Some of Abby's jewelry was stolen along with a pocketbook, some money and trolley tickets. Andrew and Abby were at the Swansea farm at the time of the theft.

Upon the discovery of the crime, Andrew immediately informed the police and demanded an investigation. Andrew later called off the investigation and the crime was never solved. It is apparent that the crime was directed toward Mrs. Borden. One can only imagine how Abby felt after this occurred.

Perhaps as a result of the daylight robbery Andrew began

locking the door to his bedroom suite when it was unoccupied. He left the key to the door upon the sitting room mantelpiece. The door between his room and Lizzie's was ultimately locked on both sides. Lizzie and Emma locked their doors also. Interestingly, Bridget Sullivan locked her bedroom door as well.

The house was now locked and secured against all enemies whether they be from outside the house or from within. The Bordens also locked exterior doors with multiple locks. The family, already divided emotionally, was now divided even further behind separate locked sections of the house.

In April of 1892, the Borden barn was broken into. It was a few months later that Andrew killed several of the pigeons which lived in the barn. Perhaps Andrew felt that the burglars who broke into the barn did so in an effort to get the pigeons.

Lizzie's compassion for animals at this time seems to have been one of convenience. This compassion did not keep her from killing Abby's cat according to the recollections of Abby Whitehead Potter. She remembered that Abby had a pet cat which could open the doors in the house on its own. According to Mrs. Potter, the cat continued to open the door to the room in which Lizzie was entertaining a guest. Lizzie caught the cat and excused herself from the room. The cat was not seen for days. Abby Borden looked continuously for her cat until one day Lizzie told Abby that if she went into the basement she would find her cat. Abby Borden went to the basement and found her cat lying on a chopping block with its head cut off by a hatchet. Mrs. Potter remembered her Aunt Abby coming to her home and relating this story.⁶⁰ Abby must have been heartbroken at the loss of her cat and that her youngest step-daughter despised her so much as to kill the innocent animal.

On July 15, 1892, Andrew bought back the Ferry Street property from his daughters. Since the girls had been given the property in the first place, their greed and selfishness is apparent in that they forced their father to pay for the same property that he had simply given them.

During the month of July, Lizzie claimed to have overheard an argument between a man and Andrew concerning the renting of a store. She claimed that the conversation was quite heated. She also said that she had seen a strange man at the back door of the Borden house one evening.

On July 23, Emma left the Borden home in order to visit friends in Fairhaven, Massachusetts. Lizzie traveled with Emma as far as New Bedford where she visited the Poole family. She returned home on July 30. On August 2, Andrew uncharacteristically admitted down street that there was trouble in his household. Since Emma had been away for almost two weeks at the time, then the trouble must have involved Lizzie.

WEDNESDAY, AUGUST 3, 1892

(Please note that times given are taken from the time line which Leonard Rebello and I researched and reconstructed for his book *Lizzie Borden: Past and Present*. This time line appears on pages 570-594.)

On the morning prior to the day of the murders, Andrew, Abby and Bridget woke up feeling ill. They had been sick throughout the previous evening. Abby was very concerned and suspicious about this illness. She worried that she had been poisoned. Shortly before 8:00 AM, Abby ran across the street from her house to the home of Dr. Seabury Bowen. Abby told Dr. Bowen that she was afraid she had been poisoned. Dr. Bowen

apparently was satisfied that the cause of the distress was in the family's recent diet. He agreed to go across the street and examine the others. When Dr. Bowen arrived at the Borden house, Andrew asked him to leave.

According to Lizzie, she was also ill and in her bedroom during this time period. However, Eli Bence, a clerk at D.R. Smith's drugstore later testified at the Inquest that Lizzie appeared at the drugstore during the day and unsuccessfully attempted to purchase prussic acid. Bence's claim was supported by the testimonies of Frank H. Kilroy, a student of medicine and Frederick B. Hart, a clerk in D.R. Smith's drugstore.

At approximately 1:30 PM, John Vinnicum Morse appeared at the Borden's front door. Morse was the brother of Andrew's first wife, Sarah and was therefore the uncle of Emma and Lizzie. After the death of his sister in 1863, Morse had remained friends with Andrew. He had no luggage with him but came to spend the night. When he arrived at the house Andrew and Abby had just finished eating dinner, but Abby prepared a plate for Morse. Andrew and Abby visited with Morse in the dining room while he ate. Morse remained in the Bordens' company until approximately 4:00 PM when he left 92 Second Street for Andrew's Swansea farm.

Morse was a bachelor who originally lived in Fall River. As a young man, Morse worked in the slaughterhouse of Isaac Davis in South Dartmouth, Massachusetts. Morse eventually left Massachusetts and settled permanently in Iowa where he was a successful farmer and horse trader. He came back to Massachusetts in 1890 and settled with Isaac Davis and his son, William in South Dartmouth. Morse had been to the Borden house a few times over the past several years. At the Inquest, he stated that he "always stayed there (at the Bordens)"; at one time nearly a year of the time."⁶¹

That evening, Lizzie and her parents had dinner together in the dining room.⁶² After dinner, Lizzie felt well enough to pay a visit to her friend, Alice Russell. Miss Russell had once lived in the Kelly's house next to the Bordens and was well acquainted with both Emma and Lizzie. During this visit, Lizzie made a startling revelation. She said that she felt as though her father had an enemy and that someone was going to do harm to him. She told Alice that the house and the barn had both been broken into. Lizzie then stated that she slept with one eye open in fear "they" would burn the house over the family's head.

Lizzie returned home at approximately 9:00 PM. She let herself in at the front door. She heard Andrew, Abby and Uncle John conversing in the sitting room. Lizzie locked the door behind her and went upstairs to her room without greeting her uncle or saying good night. Andrew and John remained in the sitting room until shortly after 10:00 PM. Mrs. Borden had already retired to her bedroom for the evening at 9:15 PM. As Andrew climbed the back stairs toward his bedroom, John Morse alighted the front staircase toward the guest chamber where he would spend the night.

Bridget, who had been visiting a friend on Third Street, returned to the Borden house at approximately 10:05 PM. She let herself in the back side door with her key. Mr. or Mrs. Borden had left a lamp lit for her in the kitchen. She got a glass of milk and then climbed the back staircases toward her attic room.

THURSDAY, AUGUST 4, 1892

John Morse was the first person in the household to awaken.

He left the guest chamber and came downstairs at approximately 6:00 AM. He made himself comfortable in a chair in the sitting room and waited for the elder Bordens to join him. He later said that he did not see anyone else while he was in the sitting room. The door between the sitting room and the kitchen was closed as usual. Therefore, Morse would not have seen Bridget who came downstairs around 6:15 AM.

Bridget began her morning by getting wood and then coal in the basement to start the fire. She opened the back side door and took in the milk can. At the same time, Bridget put out the pan for the ice man.

Abby appeared in the kitchen at approximately 6:30 AM. She asked Bridget what she had that morning to serve for breakfast. Bridget stated that there was soup and cold mutton. Abby told her to warm that over and to make johnny cakes and coffee as well. Abby told Bridget to make the soup and cold mutton for dinner also.⁶³ Judging from this conversation, Mrs. Borden was responsible for making the decisions regarding meals at the Borden house.

Abby then informed Bridget that John Morse had spent the night. Bridget, who was apparently unaware of Mr. Morse's presence in the house, asked if he had slept in the small room at the top of the attic stairs. Abby replied that he had passed the night in the guest chamber.⁶⁴

Bridget Sullivan later stated that Mrs. Borden said, "Now he (John Morse) is here I suppose we will have him on our hands all summer, I dont (sic) see why he dont (sic) get married and go away."⁶⁵ Apparently, Abby did not have a very high opinion of John Morse. Bridget said that Mrs. Borden had been saying this "all week long."⁶⁶ This statement is very interesting because according to legend, the Bordens had no prior notification that Uncle John was coming to stay with them. According to this statement, the Bordens knew that John Morse was coming to stay with them, but may not have known the day on which he would arrive.

A few minutes after Abby entered the kitchen, Andrew came down the back stairs, went into the sitting room after which he went outside. He opened the barn with a key to get water so that he could empty his slop pail, which he did near a pear tree which stood by the barn. Andrew picked some pears and brought them into the kitchen in a basket which he placed on the kitchen table. Breakfast was served at about 7:00 AM. Bridget then saw John Morse for the first time at the dining room table.

After breakfast, Andrew, Abby and John Morse retired to the sitting room. Abby went into the front hall at approximately 8:30 AM. At 8:45 AM, Andrew showed John Morse out through the back door. He invited Morse to come back to dinner and Morse accepted the invitation.⁶⁷ Lizzie then entered the kitchen with her slop pail, which she emptied in the cellar. She got her own breakfast of cookies and coffee. Bridget, who was feeling ill, ran outside and vomited near a pear tree. When Bridget returned to the kitchen she did not see Lizzie. Andrew had left the house for downtown while Bridget had been vomiting outside in the yard.

ABBY BORDEN, BRIDGET, AND WINDOW WASHING

According to Bridget Sullivan, at 9:00 AM Mrs. Borden asked her to wash the inside and outside of the first-story windows.⁶⁸ The misinterpretation of this request has served to hurt Abby Borden's character. Some see Abby's request for an ailing Bridget to wash the windows on such a (according to

legend) hot day shows Mrs. Borden to truly have been of a cruel and wicked nature.

The *Fall River Evening News* on August 4, 1892 reported that "Remington and Davol's thermometer registered 79 degrees at 11:00 AM."⁶⁹ This is clearly not the hot, sultry day the legend has always maintained. However, the point must be made that this report does not give any indication of humidity. August 4 may have been an average warm day according to the thermometer, but the humidity may have been extremely high thus making the temperature seem very hot. Therefore, we may never truly know what the exterior conditions were on that day at the Borden house as these conditions are open to personal interpretation.

Another important point is that it was **not** an unusual request for Abby to ask Bridget to wash the windows. According to Adelaide Churchill, Bridget "washed windows but once a week, and Thursday was generally the day."⁷⁰ Bridget testified that there was "no usual time to wash windows"⁷¹ and that they were sometimes washed once a month but probably twice a month.⁷² It was not out of the ordinary for Mrs. Borden to ask Bridget to wash the windows. Also, there is **no** evidence to suggest that Bridget told Mrs. Borden she was ill or that she would have preferred to wash the windows on another day. Therefore, it is possible that Abby was unaware of Bridget's physical condition and when asked to wash the windows Bridget simply agreed.

Also, one must point out that Mrs. Kelly's maid, Mary Doolan (with whom Bridget would soon lean over the fence for a chat while Abby was being butchered) was also outside that morning washing the windows of the Kelly house. Obviously, if Mrs. Kelly's servant was also washing windows on the same day and at the same time as Bridget then it is safe to assume that the weather conditions were permissible for this activity. Therefore, in relation to this instance, Abby was not the mean, hateful, uncaring creature that she has been portrayed to have been.

HISTORY IS MADE AND LIVES ARE DESTROYED

After Bridget had been given instructions to wash the windows she closed the door between the kitchen and the dining room and prepared to wash the windows outside. Since the door between the sitting room and the kitchen was already closed, Bridget was now unable to see or possibly hear what was occurring in the front part of the house. Bridget went to the cellar for a pail and to the kitchen closet for a brush. She also closed all of the windows on the first floor of the house before going out to the barn to get the stick for the brush. Therefore, it would have been quite hot on the first floor of the house given the exterior temperature and the iron cooking stove still hot from recent use. It was at this time (approximately 9:30 AM) that Lizzie Borden appeared at the back entrance and asked Bridget if she was going to clean the windows. Bridget told Lizzie that she could hook the screen door as she (Bridget) would get water from the barn. Apparently, the back door was not hooked as Bridget later entered the house to retrieve the dipper with which she rinsed the windows.

At sometime between 9:05 AM and 9:30 AM Abby Borden ascended the front staircase for the final time on her way to the guest chamber to put the pillow cases on the small pillows which rested at the foot of the bed. Abby was expecting company on Monday and wanted to close the room. As Mrs. Borden entered the guest chamber she could not have known that she would never leave that room alive.



ABBY DURFEE GRAY BORDEN

Actual Crime Scene Photograph

August 4, 1892

Reproduced courtesy of the
Fall River Historical Society

During this time period, Lizzie claimed to have been in the dining room beginning to iron handkerchiefs but was unsuccessful as the stove was not hot enough to sufficiently heat the flats. Lizzie then read a newspaper and a magazine in the kitchen.

At approximately 10:30 AM, Bridget had completed washing the outside of the sitting room, parlor and dining room windows. She then came into the house to begin washing the interior of the two sitting room windows.

At 10:44 AM, Mr. Borden was seen coming around the north side of the house to the front door. When Bridget heard Mr. Borden ring the bell at the front door, she let him in. As she struggled with the locks, Bridget swore under her breath. She then heard (but did not see) Lizzie laugh at the top of the stairs. Mr. Borden came into the sitting room, but since Bridget was washing the windows there he moved into the dining room. Lizzie came down the front staircase between five and ten minutes after Bridget let Mr. Borden into the house. Lizzie walked through the sitting room and entered the dining room where she told her father that Abby had gone out in response to a note.

Mr. Borden took the key to his bedroom from the sitting room mantelpiece and went upstairs. He later returned to the dining room. When Bridget began washing the dining room windows, Andrew went to sit in the rocking chair in the sitting room. Within a few minutes, Andrew would find a comfortable resting position for himself on the black horsehair sitting room sofa.

After completing the dining room windows, Bridget washed out the cloths in the kitchen then began to climb the back stairs toward her attic bedroom. Lizzie came out of the kitchen and into the back hallway to tell her about a sale at Sargent's Dry Goods Store. Bridget then retired to her room. The time was approximately 10:56 AM-10:57 AM.

Lizzie claimed to have gone out into the back yard to the pear

tree and from there into the loft of the barn. She claimed to have remained in the barn loft for 15-20 minutes after which she came toward the house, found the screen door open and rushed into the sitting room only to discover the body of her murdered father. At 11:10 AM, Lizzie called Bridget downstairs and sent her across the street to Dr. Bowen's house.

THE ALARM HAS BEEN SOUNDED

The call was received by the Fall River Police Department at 11:15 AM. Andrew J. Borden had been found murdered in his home on Second Street. He had ten wounds to his head and face. As word of the crime spread throughout the community, crowds of people began to gather in front of the Borden residence.

The body of Abby Borden was discovered by Bridget Sullivan and neighbor Adelaide Churchill in the second floor guest chamber at approximately 11:30 AM. She was found lying face down in a pool of blood with her arms stretched out above her head. Her body was located between the bed and the dresser in the guest chamber. There were eighteen wounds to the back of her head and one wound at the base of her neck. It was later determined that Mrs. Borden predeceased her husband by approximately an hour to an hour and a half.

The bodies of the Borden were photographed. Mrs. Borden was carried downstairs and an autopsy was performed in the dining room on an undertaker's board.⁷³ Mr. Borden's autopsy was also performed on a similar undertaker's board in the sitting room. Both bodies were then placed upon these same undertaker's boards in the dining room. The table in the dining room had been moved in order to make room for the bodies. (Contrary to popular belief, the Borden autopsies were NOT performed on the dining room table. They were never placed upon the dining room table at any time, instead, they were placed on the undertaker's boards.)

The funeral was held on Saturday in the sitting room of the Second Street home. The bodies of the Borden were then placed into horse-drawn hearses and carried to Oak Grove Cemetery. Soon Lizzie Borden would be accused, jailed, tried and acquitted of the murders of her father and her step-mother.

AFTERWARDS

Following her acquittal, Lizzie returned to the family home at 92 Second Street. She carefully packed her step-mother's belongings and had them delivered to Sarah Whitehead. Abby's real estate holdings totaled \$2,000.00 (for her one-half ownership of 45 Fourth Street).⁷⁴ Abby's personal estate which was valued at \$1,716.05 of which Sarah Whitehead received \$788.83 and George H. Fish (husband of Abby's deceased sister, Priscilla S. Fish) received \$788.84. This transfer took place on November 2, 1894.⁷⁵ Emma and Lizzie deeded their half interest of the property at 45 Fourth Street along with personal belongings and bank deposits of \$4,000 to Sarah Whitehead and Priscilla Fish.⁷⁶ This transfer took place on August 13, 1893.

About ten or twelve years following Lizzie's acquittal, Abby's niece and namesake, Abby Borden Whitehead Potter was working in a cleaning business in Fall River. One day Lizzie came into the establishment to pay a bill. Mrs. Potter remarked, "I didn't look at her, but I signed my name on the receipt. She knew who I was all right, but she didn't say a thing."⁷⁷

After Lizzie's death in 1927, Maplecroft (her home in the Hill area of Fall River which she and Emma had purchased in 1893)

remained vacant until 1933 during the estate proceedings.⁷⁸ During this time period, workmen were hired to clean out the house. One of these workmen found a silver plated cup belonging to Lizzie. The engraving was simple. It read:

Lizzie from Abbie
1868

This cup had been a gift from Abby Borden to her eight-year-old step-daughter, Lizzie, the only person in the world who would ever call her "Mother."

CLOSING REMARKS

It is my sincere hope that as a result of this article, we will begin to see the character and life of Abby Borden in a new light that shines with truth rather than fictitious legend. Abby was a victim of the Borden saga in every sense. Her victimization began when she married Andrew Borden and did not end until her unhappy life was extinguished in an undeservedly gruesome and horrific manner.

We realize that Abby Borden was not the evil step-mother that she has so long been portrayed to have been. She was a human being who longed to love and to be loved. She was well-liked by her neighbors and her servant. The Whitehead family adored her. She was not loved nor wanted in her own home by her two step-daughters who deliberately did all they could to make her life difficult and miserable.

In closing, we should all have sympathy for the woman that was Emma and Lizzie Borden's step-mother and hope that she has found the love, peace, and serenity she never seemed to enjoy in life.

SOURCE REFERENCES

1. Leonard Rebello. *Lizzie Borden: Past & Present*. (Fall River, MA: Al-Zach Press, 1999), p. 22.
2. David Kent. *Lizzie Borden Sourcebook*. (Boston: Branden Publishing Co., 1992), p. 3.
3. Robert Sullivan. *Goodbye Lizzie Borden*. (Brattleboro, VT: Stephen Greene Press, 1974), p. 18
4. Sarah Whitehead, Inquest Testimony, p. 156.
5. Robert Sullivan. *Goodbye Lizzie Borden*. (Brattleboro, VT: Stephen Greene Press, 1974), p. 18
6. "Boston Herald Traveler", October 29, 1970 (page number unavailable)
7. Hiram Harrington, Inquest Testimony, p. 135.
8. "Guilty-No!No!, Lizzie Borden's Sister Breaks 20-year Silence, Tells the Sunday Post of Past and Present Relations With Lizzie", *Boston Post*, April 13, 1913, p. 25.
9. Ibid.
10. Emma Borden, Inquest Testimony, p. 12.
11. Ibid.
12. Lizzie Borden Inquest Testimony, p. 51.
13. Ibid.
14. Ibid.
15. Ibid., p. 52.
16. "Guilty-No!No!, Lizzie Borden's Sister Breaks 20-year Silence, Tells the Sunday Post of Past and Present Relations With Lizzie", *Boston Post*, April 13, 1913, p. 25.
17. Emma Borden, Inquest Testimony, p. 107.
18. Ibid., p. 112.
19. David Kent. *Lizzie Borden Sourcebook*. (Boston: Branden Publishing Co., 1992), p. 171.
20. Ibid., p.3.
21. Leonard Rebello. *Lizzie Borden: Past & Present*. (Fall River, MA: Al-Zach Press, 1999), p. 280.
22. *Fall River Evening News*, January 23, 24 and 25, 1873.
23. Witness Statements, p. 17.
24. Witness Statements, p. 18.
25. Alice Russell, Inquest Testimony, p. 151.
26. Alice Russell, Inquest Testimony, p. 152.
27. Lizzie Borden, Inquest Testimony, p. 52.
28. Ibid., p. 53.
29. Ibid., p. 91.
30. Emma Borden, Inquest Testimony, p. 112.
31. Lizzie Borden, Inquest Testimony, p. 91.
32. Ibid., p. 52.
33. Ibid.
34. Robert Sullivan. *Goodbye Lizzie Borden*. (Brattleboro, VT: Stephen Greene Press, 1974) p. 18
35. Ibid.
36. Bridget Sullivan, Preliminary Hearing Testimony, p.1.
37. Michael Martins and Dennis Binette. *The Commonwealth of Massachusetts vs. Lizzie A. Borden: The Knowlton Papers 1892-1893*. (Fall River, MA, 1994), p. 34.
38. Ibid., p. 35.
39. Ibid.
40. Ibid., p. 40.
41. Emma Borden, Inquest Testimony, p. 108.
42. Ibid.
43. Ibid.
44. Michael Martins and Dennis Binette. *The Commonwealth of Massachusetts vs. Lizzie A. Borden: The Knowlton Papers 1892-1893*. (Fall River, MA, 1994), p.33.
45. Bridget Sullivan, Preliminary Hearing Testimony, p. 13.
46. David Kent. *Lizzie Borden Sourcebook*. (Boston: Branden Publishing Co., 1992), p. 10.
47. Phoebe Bowen, Preliminary Hearing Testimony, p. 480.
48. Ibid.
49. Augusta Tripp, Inquest Testimony, p. 141.
50. David Kent. *Lizzie Borden Sourcebook*. (Boston: Branden Publishing Co., 1992), p. 171.
51. Hannah Gifford, Inquest Testimony, p. 158.
52. Ibid.
53. Witness Statements, p. 11.
54. Hiram Harrington, Inquest Testimony, p. 135.
55. Ibid.
56. Sarah Whitehead, Inquest Testimony, p. 156.
57. Witness Statements, p. 45.
58. Sarah Whitehead, Inquest Testimony, p. 156.
59. Witness Statements, p. 17.
60. Robert Sullivan. *Goodbye Lizzie Borden*. (Brattleboro, VT: Stephen Greene Press, 1974) p. 23
61. John V. Morse, Inquest Testimony, p. 96.
62. Bridget Sullivan, Preliminary Hearing Testimony, p. 2.
63. Ibid., p. 57.
64. Bridget Sullivan, Preliminary Hearing Testimony, p. 57.
65. Michael Martins and Dennis Binette. *The Commonwealth of Massachusetts vs. Lizzie A. Borden: The Knowlton Papers 1892-1893*. (Fall River, MA, 1994), p.33.
66. Ibid.
67. John V. Morse, Preliminary Hearing Testimony, p. 102.

68. Bridget Sullivan, Preliminary Hearing Testimony, p. 10.
69. *Fall River Evening News*, August 4, 1892, p. 1.
70. Adelaide Churchill, Inquest Testimony, p. 127.
71. Bridget Sullivan, Preliminary Hearing Testimony, p. 10.
72. Ibid.
73. Undertaker's boards were portable examination tables. Please see Michael Martins and Dennis Binette, *The Commonwealth of Massachusetts vs. Lizzie A. Borden: The Knowlton Papers 1892-1893*. (Fall River, MA, 1994), p. 13 for a photograph of Andrew Borden's autopsy upon an undertaker's board.
74. Leonard Rebello, *Lizzie Borden: Past & Present*. (Fall River, MA: Al-Zach Press, 1999), p. 278.
75. Ibid.
76. Ibid.
77. "When Lizzie Took An Axe", *Providence Evening Journal*, January 17, 1969, p. 8.
78. Leonard Rebello, *Lizzie Borden: Past & Present*. (Fall River, MA: Al-Zach Press, 1999), p. 287.

LIZBITS

(Continued from Page 5)

Much to the displeasure of his employers, on his own Holder speculated in cotton and was rewarded with a tidy profit of sixty thousand dollars which he invested in Fall River mills.

He was the moving spirit behind the formation of the *Fall River Iron Works Company*, originally formed to make staves for New Bedford whale oil barrels, but which later built and invested in cotton mills. The capitalization was twenty-four thousand dollars, divided into thirty-two shares, of which Holder was awarded eight. He later bought sixteen more from Providence backers.

By the year 1879 a million and a half dollars was invested in buildings and machinery. The *Iron Works* proved to be the fount, not only of cotton mills, but the railroad, steamship lines, machine shops, and even the gas company.

The *Fall River Branch Railroad* connected the city with Boston markets. The *Providence Line* crossed Narragansett Bay with steamboat service to Providence. The famous *Fall River Line*, operating the grandest inland steamboats in the country, plied the waters between this point and New York City. The foresight of the *Iron Works* proprietors provided for the import of raw cotton from the South, and for the shipment of finished goods to markets all over the country, leading to unprecedented prosperity for its business enterprises.

Holder's greatest coup came with his leasing of the Massasoit Mill for *Brown & Ives* and equipping it on a scale of efficiency not heretofore witnessed in the town. He was the first to introduce leather belting to replace gears for enhanced power delivery to the machinery. The mill was three times larger than any other in town. For his efforts Holder was awarded a one-third interest, and when *Brown & Ives* withdrew the mill came under his sole direction.

At the same time Holder was running his own profitable calico printing works, emulating the spectacular success of Andrew Robeson in that field. In 1834 Holder persuaded the shareholders of the *Iron Works* to back him in building the *American Print Works* which became the largest in the country in the business of printed cotton cloth. Holder aimed to dominate

that business not only in Fall River but throughout the country.

Holder Borden had other interests, wide and varied. He was a charter member of the *Fall River Bank* in 1825, and was elected one of its first Directors. He was a part owner of the *Anawan Cotton Mill* erected by the *Iron Works*. He owned a sheeting mill in the small town, of Plainville.

In Providence he invested in a grocery business and he formed the brokerage firm of *Borden & Bowen*. This concern did a large business on its own and also acted as the agent for local cotton mills.

He was constantly on the road between the two cities, dashing from one activity to another. He traveled by sulky, keeping fresh mounts at strategic places on the way. He covered the eighteen miles in one hour, much to the amazement of farmers and small boys encountered on the way.

He worked prodigiously. Sometime after 1825 he noticed the first portents of his coming illness. As an anodyne he took to smoking cigars day and night. With increasing disability as years went by Holder was unable to rise from his sickbed. Nevertheless he gave orders to his cousins Richard and Jefferson for the management of his affairs. In the panic of 1837 he was able to avert bankruptcy by sending his nephew, Philip Borden, in the midst of a dark and threatening storm, to Providence there to enlist the aid of connections in that city. Philip's mission was successful and the credit of Fall River was sustained. Holder had pledged his entire property as security. Holder Borden died of consumption that very year. At only thirty-eight years of age he was the richest man in town. In his lifetime Holder's purse was ever open for needy causes, and for the welfare of his church and city.

He died intestate. His estate was managed by Major Durfee and upon his death passed intact his widow. The widow, then remarried as Mary B. Young, made important contributions to the welfare of Fall River. This included the land on which the *Public Library* now stands, and the magnificent *B.M.C. Durfee High School*. The school bears the name of her son who died soon after graduation from *Yale University*.

Often the measure of a man is found in the obituaries following death. About Holder Borden, the *Providence Journal* wrote, "In this man philanthropy lost an ardent friend, religion a liberal supporter, the community an honest man." The *Fall River Monitor* eulogized, "But few men in this or any other community have lived more generally respected or whose loss has been more extensively lamented."

Henry H. Earl wrote that "rarely has one so young as Holder attained such prominence in a community. Rarely does one combine, as Holder did, those three elements of assured success: bold energy, untiring industry and unbending integrity."

Together with the Durfees and Borden kin, Holder helped to shape the social, political and cultural order into which Lizzie Borden was born some twenty-three years after his death. His families erected sumptuous mansions on the Hill, the most desirable part of town. They founded and worshiped in the prestigious *Central Congregational Church*. By all segments of the population they were looked up to and envied. It is no wonder that Lizzie aspired to be part of that world to which her name and father's wealth entitled her to be.

It is generally conceded that Holder's vision and foresight provided the basis for Fall River's world dominance in the manufacture of cotton cloth. However, it must be stated that not

all historians give him that credit. The *Phillips History of Fall River* ascribes that honor to Holder's step-father, Bradford Durfee.

Deserving more than mere mention in the following bibliography is the recently published book, *Constant Turmoil* by Mary H. Blewett. It is history of the cotton industry in New England, and is the source of much of the material afore written in this essay. Ms. Blodgett makes no bones about her belief in Lizzie's guilt, writing that she hid her bloody dress under another in the clothes closet and that she disposed in the cellar the bloody rags that had cleansed her face and hair.

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

1. *Life on the Stream* by Alice Brayton c. 1962.
2. *Fall River and Its Industries* by Frederick Peck and Henry H. Earl, 1877.
3. *History of Fall River* by Arthur Sherman Phillips, 1946.
4. *Constant Turmoil* by Mary H. Blewett, 2000.
5. *Bristol County, Massachusetts* by Alanson Borden, 1890.
6. *Lizzie Borden: Past & Present* by Leonard Rebello, 2000.
7. *Fall River Herald*, March 25, 1906, which printed a memoir by S. Angier Chace, made available to me by the *Fall River Historical Society*.

THE WHITEHEAD HOUSE DISCOVERED

(Continued from Page 6)

By 1883, Jane left the Fourth Street house and moved to 7 Park Street, a short distance away. She eventually moved next door to her daughter to 43 Fourth Street boarding at the Alexander Milne house from 1885-1888, and one year later she lived across the street from her daughter at 40 Fourth Street (1889-1890).¹¹ At the time of the Borden murders she resided at 215 Second Street (1892-1894),¹² a short distance from the Borden house at 92 Second Street.

Mrs. Whitehead said her mother wished to sell her half-interest of the Fourth Street property. Sarah was unable to buy her mother's half-share and did not want to sell her interest in the house.¹³ Selling the house to Abby Borden would keep the property in the family and not in the hands of a stranger. Mrs. Gray's half-share interest of the house was sold to Abby Borden in May 1887 for \$1,500.¹⁴

It didn't take long before the winds of gossip reached the ears of Emma and Lizzie. They discovered that Abby had purchased the half-share of the Whitehead house and perhaps knew that their father provided the funds to Abby to purchase the property. It was a purchase that was to fuel a family feud. The same day, Mrs. Gray went to the bank and paid the balance on the mortgage on the Fourth Street property.¹⁵ Hosea Knowlton, the prosecuting attorney, used the Fourth Street purchase to show that Lizzie hated her stepmother when he questioned her at the inquest. He was able to get Lizzie to say that the affair over the purchase of 45 Fourth Street with her [Abby's stepsister] caused Lizzie to call Abby "Mrs. Borden" rather than mother. Emma said that she and Lizzie felt that they too should have property given to them as their stepmother was given by her husband. Mrs. Whitehead said Emma and Lizzie did not like their stepmother and showed their disapproval about Abby buying the half-share of the property on Fourth Street by walking past her when she was on the street.¹⁶ Four months later Mr. Borden, to appease his daughters, deeded the old Borden homestead on Ferry Street that was once owned by



THE WHITEHOUSE HOUSE

As it looks at the beginning of the 21st century

Photograph from the Leonard Rebello collection

Andrew's father, Abraham, to Emma and Lizzie.¹⁷ They kept the property, but complained the Ferry Street house was too much to maintain. Andrew Borden purchased the property from Emma and Lizzie on July 18, 1892, and gave each daughter \$2,500.¹⁸ However, Emma agreed with Knowlton that the deeding of the Ferry Street home did not "heal the breach"¹⁹ and negative feelings toward Abby and her half-share ownership of the Fourth Street property.

No one was home at the Whitehead house the morning the Borden murders were committed. Jane Gray, now living at 215 Second Street, and her daughter, Sarah Whitehead, were on their way by boat to spend a cool, relaxing and entertaining day at Rocky Point Amusement Park in Rhode Island. Many of the Fall River police were also there for their annual police outing. Sarah's children, Abby and George, stayed with their aunt Lucy Cahoon at 28 Whipple Street, a five-minute walk from their home on Fourth Street. Aunt Lucy was the daughter of Jane Gray from a previous marriage, and the wife of Elisha C. Cahoon. A police officer was dispersed that fateful day to inform Mrs. Cahoon about the tragedy at the Borden home. It was many years later that Abby Borden Whitehead Potter recalled that her Aunt Lucy, when told the news, dropped the window on Mrs. Potter's hands. Police officers Patrick Doherty and Philip Harrington later interviewed Miss Ida P. Gray, a dressmaker, who lived across the Street from Mrs. Cahoon. She recalled a conversation she overheard on the trolley between two unknown ladies the day *after* the murders. She said one of the ladies heard Lizzie say, "She [Abby Borden] was one of the kind that never die."²⁰ Mrs. Gray and her daughter were also interviewed by the police. Mrs. Gray, Abby Borden's stepmother, told police officials that "Things were not pleasant at the Borden house as they might be."²¹ Sarah claimed "Lizzie did not like Mrs. Borden."²² Thomas Walker, a tailor and a former tenant at the Whitehead house, who had been evicted prior to the murders, was at work the day the murders took place.²³

Lizzie was accused and was to stand trial for the murder of her stepmother Abby, and her father, Andrew. After a sensational 13-day trial in June of 1893, Lizzie was found not guilty. She

departed from the courthouse to Fall River in a new landau hack headed by two black horses with gold mounted harnesses.²⁴ That evening, Lizzie celebrated her acquittal and stayed with the Holmes family on Pine Street, a short distance from Second Street. The next morning, the two sisters returned to Second Street.²⁵ Emma and Lizzie inherited their father's estate including Abby's half-share of the Whitehead house on Fourth Street. Would Emma and Lizzie retain their half-share of the Whitehead house?

Two months after the trial, Emma and Lizzie sold their inherited half-share share of the Fourth Street property for "one dollar and other considerations" to Abby's half-sister, Sarah and Abby's sister, Priscilla Fish of Connecticut.²⁶ Abby's personal belongings and bank deposits totaling \$1,716.05 were released to Sarah and Priscilla.²⁷

By September 1893, Emma and Lizzie were in their new home on French Street²⁸ and the Whiteheads now owned three-quarters of the property on Fourth Street and Mrs. Fish owned a one-quarter share. The city forged ahead with its plans to extend Spring Street further so that it connected first to Third Street and eventually to Fourth Street by 1900. Abby's sister, Priscilla, and her husband both died in Hartford, Connecticut, in January 1894.²⁹ Their interest in the Fourth Street property was deeded by their relatives to the Whiteheads in 1897.

Reading and tracking the land transactions and the mortgaging of the property by the Whiteheads led Bill Pavao to suggest that I check city records to determine if any permits were obtained for the property. It appeared the Whiteheads were not only in the process of mortgaging the house, but planned to construct another large three-family home on the Fourth Street lot. Mr. Whitehead obtained a building permit on March 13, 1897,³⁰ to build a new 27'x 45' structure and to "move and improve" the original house that Oliver Gray had purchased in 1857 to the rear of the property.³¹ The mystery of the two houses on the same lot was finally solved by a simple written note that read, "old house moved in rear and improved."³² I was elated that I could verify the original house to Bill Pavao who had always insisted that the smaller house was the Whitehead house. The new oversized three-family structure was renumbered as 165 Fourth Street and the original Whitehead house was renumbered as 171 Fourth Street. The Whitehead house, like the Borden's house, was quite close to the street. Unlike the Borden house with its 13 rooms, the property at 45 Fourth Street, was a rather small two-family cottage duplex two blocks behind the Borden home on Second Street.

Construction of the new house continued. However, Sarah's husband, George, never moved into his new home with his family. He died at the age of 38 on August 8, 1898, of a liver infection.³³ Sarah, now a young widow, and her two young children; Abby, age 14, and George, age 11, were in the new house by 1900 and resided there until 1912. The two houses on Fourth Street were sold.

Sarah and her daughter, Abby, who was now married, moved to New York City and subsequently to Salt Lake City, Utah, Toronto, Philadelphia, Winnipeg, Manitoba, Canada, and eventually to Providence, Rhode Island.³⁴ Jane Gray, the second wife of Oliver Gray, died in 1916. Sarah Whitehead died in Winnipeg in 1932 at the age of 80. Lucy Cahoon, the daughter of Jane Gray, died in 1939. It was Sarah's daughter, Abby Borden Whitehead Potter, who was interviewed about the Borden

murders by the *Providence Journal* in 1969³⁵ and again by Judge Robert Sullivan in 1972 for his book, *Goodbye Lizzie Borden* (1974). Two years later, Mrs. Potter, Abby Borden's niece, died. The Whiteheads, Grays, and Mrs. Potter are buried at Oak Grove Cemetery, a short distance from the Borden family plot.³⁶

SOURCE REFERENCES

1. *Fall River City Document* No. 54, 1901: 323 and *Fall River City Documents* No. 55, 1902: 333.
2. *Providence Evening Journal*, January 17, 1969: 1.
3. Sullivan, Robert. *Goodbye Lizzie Borden*. Brattleboro, VT: Stephen Greene Press. 1974:10.
4. Trial: 1556.
5. Tiverton, Rhode Island, 1850 Federal Census.
6. Registry of Deeds, Fall River, Massachusetts, Book 128 Page 171.
7. Tiverton, Rhode Island, 1850 Federal Census. Sarah was listed as "manufacturer" which may imply that she was listed as a mill worker or dressmaker.
8. Marriage records, City of Fall River, Massachusetts, 1882.
9. Probate Court, Taunton, Massachusetts, will of Oliver Gray, 1878.
10. Rebello, Leonard. *Lizzie Borden: Past & Present*. Fall River, MA: Al-Zach Press. 1999:23.
11. *Fall River City Directories*, 1860-1918.
12. Witness Statements: 21.
13. Witness Statements: 13, 14.
14. Registry of Deeds, Fall River, Massachusetts, Book 128, Page 271.
15. Registry of Deeds, Fall River, Massachusetts, Book 128, Page 88.
16. Witness Statements: 14.
17. Registry of Deeds, Fall River, Massachusetts, Book 130, Page 524.
18. Registry of Deeds, Fall River, Massachusetts, Book 5, Page 219.
19. Inquest: 112.
20. Witness Statements: 11.
21. Witness Statements: 17.
22. Witness Statements: 14.
23. Witness Statements: 13.
24. Rebello, Leonard. *Lizzie Borden: Past & Present*. Fall River, MA: Al-Zach Press. 1999: 253.
25. Rebello, Leonard. *Lizzie Borden: Past & Present*. Fall River, MA: Al-Zach Press. 1999: 253.
26. Registry of Deeds, Fall River, Massachusetts, Book 16, Page 259.
27. Rebello, Leonard. *Lizzie Borden: Past & Present*. Fall River, MA: Al-Zach Press. 1999: 273.
28. Registry of Deeds, Fall River, Massachusetts, Book 16, Page 235.
29. Obituary of Mr. Fish, *Hartford Daily Courant*, January 4, 1894:5 and obituary for Mrs. Priscilla Fish *Hartford Daily Courant*, January 27, 1894:5.
30. City of Fall River, Government Center, Planning Board Department Records.
31. "Intentions to Build" *Fall River Evening News*, March 15, 1989:8 col.2.
32. Building permit on file at Government Center, Fall River, Massachusetts.

33. Death record of George W. Whitehead on file, Government Center, Fall River, Massachusetts.
34. *Providence Evening Journal*, January 17, 1969:1.
35. Ibid.
- 36 Cemetery Records, Oak Grove Cemetery, Fall River, Massachusetts.

TRIAL TESTIMONY OF JOHN VINNICUM MORSE

(Continued from Page 9)

ask for the presence of Dr. Dolan because he testifies largely to facts, but when witnesses do arrive on either side who have no knowledge of the circumstances whatever, are called for their opinions as men of experience, I suppose the Court would not enforce an order for their exclusion?

MR. ROBINSON. We wish to except from the order Mr. Buck, Mr. Jubb, Mr. Holmes, and a reporter, a Mr. Caldwell, who may or may not be called.

MR. KNOWLTON. He is actively engaged in reporting now. That is agreed to.

MASON, C. J. The defence do not desire to have excluded experts who testify as such.

MR. ROBINSON. We do not.

MR. KNOWLTON. I would say Dr. Draper did assist at the autopsy, but I suppose you do not care to make an exception of him?

MR. ROBINSON. We do.

MR. KNOWLTON. We will talk of that later.

MASON, C. J. All the witnesses that have been summoned on either side, with the exception of the three that are serving as reporters and have been named, and with the exception of those who are summoned for expert testimony exclusively, and the three that have been named by counsel, called for the defence, may now withdraw, and the sheriff will see that a suitable place is provided and that all witnesses that may hereafter come will also withdraw from the room until they testify.

MR. KNOWLTON. As a matter of fact that has been largely done during the trial.

Q. I may repeat, Mr. Morse, a question or two.

A. All right.

Q. When you came down stairs on Thursday morning, into which room did you go?

A. Sitting-room.

Q. What sort of a day was it Thursday with respect to its temperature?

A. Pretty warm.

Q. Was any one else in the sitting-room when you came down stairs on Thursday morning?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you remain in the sitting-room until some one else came down stairs?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Was the door between that room and the kitchen open or closed at that time, if you recall?

A. I think it was closed to the best of my recollection.

Q. Whom did you first see after you got up on that morning?

A. Mr. Borden.

Q. Into which room did he come?

A. Sitting-room.

Q. Whom did you next see?

A. Mrs. Borden.

Q. Into which room did she come?

A. Sitting-room.

Q. Did you remain in the sitting-room until breakfast time?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. You took breakfast, I take it, in the dining room?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Who of the family breakfasted with you?

A. Mr. and Mrs. Borden.

Q. Can you tell us the time that breakfast was served?

A. I think about seven.

Q. Can you tell what there was for breakfast?

A. Well, we had some mutton, has some bread, coffee, cakes, &c.

Q. What sort of cakes, what material?

A. Well, made of sugar, sugar cakes.

Q. Do you recall anything else except those articles you have named?

A. Fruit on the table.

Q. What sort of fruit?

A. Bananas.

Q. Do you recall a dish that is called fried johnny cakes?

A. I don't recollect whether we had fried johnny cakes or not that morning.

Q. Do you remember how long you remained sitting at the breakfast table?

A. Oh, I should judge about a half an hour or such a matter.

Q. Did you all arise at the same time, completing your breakfast?

A. I think so.

Q. Did all who sat at the breakfast table partake of the breakfast?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. After you had completed your breakfast into what room did you go?

A. The sitting-room.

Q. Did anyone go in with you?

A. Mr. Borden went in.

Q. What became of Mrs. Borden?

A. Well, a short time after, she came in there afterwards.

Q. Did you go into any other room than the sitting-room before you started to go away?

A. No, sir.

(Editor's note: That's all the space we have for now. Sorry to cut the testimony short for two issues in a row. We shall attempt to offer a greater portion in the April, 2002 issue.)

LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY



Volume I, Number 1 ---- Not Available
 Volume I, Number 2 ---- Not Available
 Volume I, Number 3 ---- \$ 15.00
 Volume I, Number 4 ---- \$ 10.00
 Remaining Back Issues - \$ 8.00

BACK ISSUES

LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY

Bristol Community College
 777 Elsbree Street
 Fall River, MA 02720-7391

Non-Profit
 Organization
 U.S. Postage
PAID
 Fall River, MA
 Permit No. 140

Make check or money order payable to the

LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY

For new subscribers either remove the label and write your name and address or just write to us with the same information. Please include your check or money order.

Mail to:

LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY

Dr. Gabriela Schalow Adler - Publisher
 Bristol Community College
 777 Elsbree Street
 Fall River MA 02720-7391

If your label says - **Remaining Issues: 0** - Renew your subscription now!

☒ Cut-out or duplicate coupon and mail today! ☒ Your Choice!

U.S.A. → 1 Year \$18.00 ☐ 2 Years \$ 30.00 ☐

Non U.S.A. → 1 Year \$24.00 ☐ 2 Years \$ 40.00 ☐

Affix mailing label here.



THE LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY

GOVERNMENT DOCUMENTS
COLLECTION
JUL 12 2002
University of Massachusetts
Depository Copy

Volume IX, Number 2

\$6.00

April, 2002

LIZZIE'S UNWAVERING DEFENDER!

ARTHUR PHILLIPS' PERSPECTIVE ON LIZZIE

By Terence Duniho

(Editor's note: With open arms we welcome back Mr. Terence Duniho who last appeared with us as co-author of the headline article, "Will the Real Inquest Testimony of Lizzie Borden Please Stand Up?," in the October 2001 issue. His incisive, penetrating intellect is brought to bear once again in his current offering.

The young 27-year-old Arthur Sherman Phillips was working for the Morton and Jennings law firm during the time of the Lizzie Borden trial and helped in the defense. His zeal was unwavering in his conviction that Miss Lizzie was innocent. He never lost this assurance. Mr. Duniho examines Phillips' final written words on the subject, with consummate logic)

FIRST, SOME BACKGROUND

Arthur S. Phillips worked closely with Lizzie Borden's attorney, Andrew J. Jennings, on the Borden murders case, from just after the murders were committed until shortly after she was acquitted 10 ½ months later. Five and a half years younger than Lizzie, Mr. Phillips had just graduated from Boston University Law School about two months before the murders. "For nearly a year he was the 'trigger man' in collecting evidence" on the case.¹ From all this, don't you think we had the right to expect a bit more accuracy and detail from the man?!



ARTHUR SHERMAN PHILLIPS

REPRODUCED FROM:
PHILLIPS, ARTHUR. *THE PHILLIPS HISTORY OF FALL RIVER*.
Fascicle I:
Dover Press, Printed Privately (1944)

PHOTOGRAPH COURTESY OF THE LEONARD REBELLO COLLECTION

Even though Phillips died in 1941, a three-volume work titled *The Phillips History of Fall River* was published as three separate installments (fascicles) between 1944 and 1946. Tucked away in the third of these, published in 1946, is a brief account of the case. In 1986 Robert A. Flynn republished this account as a separate "facsimile abstract edition" titled "The Borden Murder Mystery: In Defence [sic] of Lizzie Borden."

Phillips maintained a strong belief in Lizzie's innocence throughout his life, and he apparently intended to offer additional evidence in his account that would support that belief. But did he? Although he explicitly wrote, "I ask the reader in weighing the new facts now presented ...," in the facsimile edition's twenty-two pages, I've been able to find only two relatively unimportant facts that could not be known from any other source earlier than 1946. But more disheartening is the number of factual errors his essay contains. This first led me to think that his "joint author and editor" may have had more of a hand in the writing of his "Lizzie chapter" than Phillips himself did.

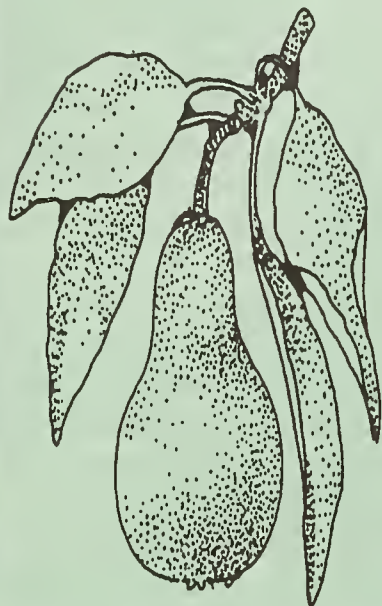
(Continued on Page 18)

THE LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY

A Different Menu:

On The Table This Issue:

- Arthur Phillips' Perspective on Lizzie* Page 1.
By Terence Duniho
- Borden Banter* Page 6.
By Sherry Chapman
- Dear Abby?* Page 7.
By Sherry Chapman
- Why Lizzie Will Forever Haunt* Page 8.
By Denise Noe
- A Visit to 92 Second Street and Environs* Page 9.
By Terence Duniho
- The Trial Testimony of Mr. John Vinnicum Morse - Part III* Page 10.
Permission Granted by the Massachusetts Superior Court



Standard Fare:

- BIBLIOGRAPHIC BORDEN** Page 4.
by Lisa Zawadzki
- LIZBITS** Page 5.
by Neilson Caplain
- PRINCESS MAPLECROFT** Page 2.
by Mary T. Cusack
- LETTERS TO THE EDITOR** Page 3.
Ann Robson
Richard S. Jubinville
Harry Widdows

THE LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY

Volume IX, Number 2, April, 2002

Publisher Gabriela Schalow Adler
Editor Maynard F. Bertolet
Copy Editor Jeannine H. Bertolet
Business Manager Roberta Gonneville
Photographer Jeannine H. Bertolet

Staff Contributors:
Neilson Caplain
Mary T. Cusack
Lisa Zawadzki

Current Issue Contributors:
Sherry Chapman
Terence Duniho
Richard S. Jubinville
Denise Noe
Ann Robson
Harry Widdows

Printing and Mailing:
TCI Press
21 Industrial Court
Seekonk, MA 02771-2016

The *Lizzie Borden Quarterly* is published four times a year on January 15, April 15, July 15 and October 15. Distribution is by U.S. mail. Current one-year USA mail subscriptions cost \$18.00 for one year and \$30.00 for two years. Non-USA subscriptions are \$24.00 for one year and \$40.00 for two years. The Editor reserves the right to edit and/or revise submissions, without changing intent. If possible, please submit articles on floppy disks in any PC format. To be considered, submissions must be received 60 days prior to the publication date and include the author's name, address and telephone number. Advertising rates are \$50.00 for a quarter-page, \$100.00 for a half-page and \$200.00 for a full-page.

Send all subscription payments to:
Lizzie Borden Quarterly
Dr. Gabriela Schalow Adler - Publisher
Bristol Community College
777 Elsbree Street
Fall River, MA 02720-7391

Send all *LBQ* submissions,
letters to the editor and
address changes to:
Lizzie Borden Quarterly
Mr. Maynard F. Bertolet - Editor
2 Blancoyd Road
Merion Station, PA 19066-1802
Telephone and Fax Numbers: (610) 664-2247
E-Mail: Bertolet@msn.com

Lizzie Borden Quarterly
(ISSN 1069-4900)
©2002 Bristol Community College
All rights reserved.
Unauthorized duplication prohibited by law.

PRINCESS MAPLECROFT

Theory NO 232
THE RICOCHET THEORY



©2002 Mary T. Cusack

MISS LIZZIE BORDEN'S EDITOR SPEAKS

On our back page, both in the last issue and the current issue, we have listed the price structure for available back issues of the *Lizzie Borden Quarterly*. I must hasten to tell you that, as of this writing, there are only a few issues left of Volume I, issues 3 and 4. Actually, they are both in the low single digits, consequently, if you desire copies, now would be the time to buy!

This issue is a time of doubles. We have two authors with two articles each. Mr. Terence Duniho from Providence, Rhode Island has the headline piece about Arthur S. Phillips which is complimented by his first-hand experiences while spending the night in Fall River at 92 Second Street. Our resident humorist, Mrs. Sherry Chapman from Rockwood, Michigan brings us her third set of unique humorous items. All three present different comical approaches and content and are equally delightful. Her 'double' article was inspired by Mr. William L. Pavao's headline piece in the January, 2002 issue about Mrs. Abby Borden, thus our reason for bringing it to you now.

Looking forward to the July, 2002 issue, we plan to present another article from that master craftsman, Mr. Leonard Rebello. His work always whets the appetite for more and never disappoints.

Since its inception, the *Lizzie Borden Quarterly* had been a volunteer effort at BCC (*Bristol Community College*) in Fall River. Our new publisher, Dr. Gabriela Schalow Adler, put the wheels in motion to have the business details elevated to a professional status within the BCC chain of command, hence, I am pleased to inform you that Ms. Roberta Gonneville has been appointed our Business Manager and assumed the day-to-day business details of our operation.

Ms. Gonneville has already proved her worth in many ways. Her official BCC title is Accounts Payable Accountant. The elevation of the LBQ to this status within BCC, and having a real professional take care of the business details, can only be good news for the continuation of the *Lizzie Borden Quarterly* into the distant future.

Now, what about you? You also have a stake in our future! We depend upon our subscriber base to provide grist for our mill by stringing together words into the intelligible, logical, researched articles that make us what we are. Now, don't let that scare you. We look forward to, and welcome the efforts of budding authors, while at the same time, attempt to coax further gems from our more seasoned contributors. Each of you probably has that spark of creativity to add to the corpus of our work, else why subscribe? Let's hear from you! You might be surprised at how much you learn by using the past as prologue.

Once again, please check your address label. If you see **Remaining Issues: 0**, renew your subscription as soon as possible. This will eliminate the need for us to send you a reminder notice, and save us a little bit of money besides!

Maynard F. Bertolet

LETTERS TO THE EDITOR

January 31, 2002

Dear Editor,

William Pavao did a fine job in defense of Abby Borden, a long overdue recognition.

I hadn't had a chance to read the recent issue until last night. I appreciate the offer to subscribe once more at the previous (original) price as well as all the volunteer effort that goes into each issue. I have been a subscriber since the inception of the *Quarterly* as well as an attendee at the 1992 Centennial.

My thanks to all of you,

Ann Robson

Vida, Oregon

(Editor's note: Thank you very much Mrs. Robson, however, we received another letter about the rate increase that was not such a glowing tribute. It seems that this person did not receive his January issue in time to take advantage of the old rate offer, consequently, we have extended his subscription by one additional issue. If any of you had the same problem, and renewed your subscriptions at the new rate due to a delivery delay, please drop me a line and we shall make a similar adjustment to your subscription.)

January 27, 2002

Dear Dr. Adler,

Please renew my *Lizzie Borden Quarterly* subscription for a two-year period. Please continue with the excellent articles that you always seem to acquire for the *Quarterly*, making it a wonderful resource of information.

Sincerely,

Mr. Richard S. Jubinville

Warwick Rhode Island

(Editor's note: Preliminary trial question about the October, 2001 LBQ article "The Lizzie Borden and Bridget Sullivan Missing Inquest Transcripts" by Maynard F. Bertolet)

Wednesday, November 28, 2001 5:59 PM

Mr. Bertolet,

... I also note that you say "Volume I index cover page" is missing. I don't know whether my cover sheet is the same as the missing sheet, although I can't figure why I would have it and the official transcript would not. We may not be referring to the same thing ...

Harry Widdows

Spartanburg, South Carolina

(Editor's note: Mr. Widdows is 100% correct! The Volume I Index Cover Sheet was mistakenly not included in our copy of the trial and should not be considered a missing document. Mr. Widdows was kind enough to furnish a copy for us.)

THE BIBLIOGRAPHIC BORDEN

By Lisa Zawadzki

(Editor's note: Just a quick note to let the world at large know what a treasure we have in Lisa Zawadzki. She began the "Bibliographic Borden" in July, 1993 and has continued for 32 editions, not to mention several full length book reviews. Thank you Lisa for your continuing superb findings ...)

Hello once again, loyal readers. I hope all of you have been spending this winter curled up with lots of good books. I know I certainly have been. Here are a few new things I found that you may want to take a look at.

Filetti, Jean S.

From Lizzie Borden to Lorena Bobbitt :

Violent Women and Gendered Justice

Journal of American Studies, vol. 35, 2001: 471-484.

This interesting article examined the familiar theme of how gender has played a role in the courtroom. Both the judgements passed upon and the public's perception of these two women were discussed. Violent women are seen by the majority of people as a paradox, and need to be explained within society's norms.

Both women were accused of purposely attacking others with a weapon. Women are not supposed to act this way. They are perceived as life givers, as nurturers. The author, calling her two subjects "damsels in distress" felt that the decisions reached in these two cases proved that point.

Lizzie was, as we all know, found not guilty. Filetti gave examples of how the crime Lizzie was accused of was seen as too brutal for a woman, especially a lady like Miss Borden, to have committed. The press also gave stereotyped commentary, portraying Lizzie as a helpless victim of the police. Women's and church groups rallied to her cause.

Lorena Bobbitt was found not guilty by reason of temporary insanity. Accused of emasculating her abusive husband, she was said to suffer from posttraumatic stress disorder and battered woman syndrome. She was also easily perceived as a victim. She was described as "submissive and pretty" and walked free, as did Lizzie, because she fit into society's mold as "weak, defensive women, victims in need of protection".

The author went on to discuss battered women syndrome in more detail. The convictions of two other women accused of violent acts was interesting. Because they did not fit into what was felt to be the role of the helpless feminine victim, they were found guilty and sent to prison. The article closed mentioning the theory that Lizzie may have been the victim of incest, thus setting the stage for the violence to come.

This was a thought-provoking article. The author had a well-presented argument for both the cases. What struck me most were Filetti's thoughts on how closely the feelings about violent women have not really changed too much over the course of one hundred-plus years.

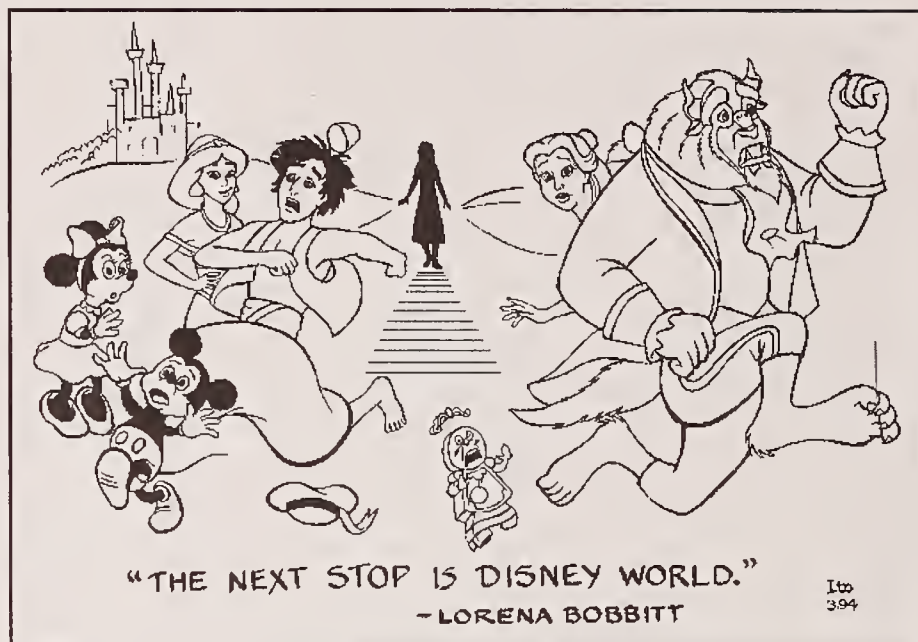
Buckland, Gail.

Lizzie Borden

In "Shots in the Dark: True Crime Pictures"

Boston : Little, Brown and Company, 2001: 86-87.

The Borden case was featured first in a section titled "Sensational Cases" in this collection of crime scene photography. One



LORENA BOBBITT AT DISNEY WORLD

This is the fourteenth in a series of fine Disney fanart drawings by Bob Ito
<http://www.tiac.net/users/lar3ry/ito/bobitwdw.html>

page was devoted to commentary on the crimes, the other on pictures of the victims.

Four photographs were given, three of which have appeared in countless books and will be familiar to all Borden readers. The fourth was a very grisly autopsy picture of Mr. Borden that was quite detailed. To the best of my knowledge the only other place this picture has appeared was in the *Knowlton Papers*.

A good contemporary editorial from the *New York Times* was provided, stating that there were a "thousand theories and upon which opinions may differ as variously as the idiosyncrasies of those who form them". Which is, of course, as true today as it was in 1892.

I wish to provide a word of warning to readers who may be tempted to purchase this book on my brief description above. The Borden pictures we are used to seeing are relatively mild compared to the other pictures in this collection. Many of these photographs are quite graphic and could be disturbing to some people. This is not a book for the faint of heart.

Just a couple of quick notes. Robert Bloch's short story *Lizzie Borden Took an Axe ...*, which appeared in the hard-to-find 1965 paperback *The Skull of Marquis de Sade and Other Stories*, also is included in the collection *A Harvest of Horrors*. This book was edited by Eric Protter and was published by Vanguard Press in 1980. The story was also reprinted in the January 1994 edition of *The Lizzie Borden Quarterly*.

Also, I saw on the Internet that *The Mammoth Book of Killer Women*, edited by Richard Glyn Jones, has come out in a new edition. I did not get a chance to inspect this book myself, but it is probably a safe bet that it still contains the same essay; Dorothy Dunbar's *Far From the Old Folks at Home*. The new edition only has about fifteen more pages than the old one, so I doubt that there have been any sweeping changes. I am still seeking out this book; if there is a difference I will inform you in my next column.

That's all for now. I'll see you in the next issue.

By Neilson Caplain

DO YOU BELIEVE IN GHOSTS?

The *Fall River Herald News* reported that *Lifetime Television* was planning a series on *Unsolved Mysteries*, among which would appear a section on the Borden murders. The filming took place at the *Lizzie Borden Bed & Breakfast/Museum* on Second Street in Fall River.

Investigations in the murder house disclosed some strange, eerie, intriguing happenings.

A loud male voice was heard on a device that recorded sounds ordinary mortals cannot hear. Lights turned on and off, doors opened and closed, unexplained knocks, books moved from one place to another, were reported by Ms. Martha McGinn, owner of the house. She also saw a glowing vision of an older woman in Victorian dress. It must have been Abby's ghost!!

A maid making the bed in Abby's death chamber saw a distinct indenture in the mattress and pillow in the shape of a short, heavy person. Abby, again?

Ms. Martha McGinn, owner, and guests have heard children laughing at play. One saw a small Victorian boy. Another said a little girl asked her to read a story. Was it the shade of Alice, Lizzies's sister, who died in infancy?

If you doubt these shenanigans read what two authorities on ghosts have said in the *South Coast Insider* of October 2001. The first is Edward Lodi who has written books on the subject and who lectures at local institutions. "I believe something is happening out there. Intelligent thinking people tell me they believe in ghosts so it's not just nuts who have this belief."

Curt Norris, the author of *Ghosts I Have Known*, says "Yes, I have seen some weird events, such as tables floating in a house I owned."

You couldn't prove these goings-on with Joyce G. Williams, co-author of the respected tome, *Lizzie Borden: A Case Book of Family and Crime in the 1890's*. Ms. Williams stayed overnight at 92 Second Street on August 2 about four years ago and even made so bold as to sleep in Lizzie's room. When asked about it later, Professor Williams said she didn't know of any lingering ghosts.

What is your opinion? Visit the *Lizzie Borden Bed & Breakfast/Museum* and see for yourself. Better yet, stay overnight in Abby's room, if you are strong at heart !!

THE BORDEN BUILDINGS

There are, or were, three edifices bearing the name Borden: the *Borden Block*, the *A.J. Borden Building*, and the *Borden Mills Block*. The latter, occupied by workers at the *Richard Borden Cotton Mill*, is no longer in existence. The *Borden Block* is on South Main Street, directly opposite the *A.J. Borden Building*.

The *Borden Block* is sometimes called the *Academy Building*, after the theater located on its second floor. The structure is ornate modified Gothic erected in 1875 by Simeon Borden. Recent renovations have converted the building to apartments, but the facade has been faithfully preserved and the edifice is listed in the National Register.

The *A.J. Borden Building* is located one block south of Pleasant Street, on the west side of South Main Street. It is now owned and occupied by the *Aetna Insurance Company*. In the



A.J. BORDEN BUILDING

PHOTOGRAPH COURTESY OF THE FALL RIVER HISTORICAL SOCIETY

renovations that took place the facade was supposed to have been preserved and the site included in the National Register. It is considered one of the oldest commercial building in the central business district.

Construction complete, the building was opened for occupancy in 1890. The first tenants on the street floor were *Charles E. Macomber & Company* and the *Knox and Charlton Five & Ten Cent Store*. The former store was a retailer of clothing and furnishing goods.

The *Five & Ten Cent Store* was the first store opened by Earle P. Charlton. This distinguished citizen who was never able to complete his high school education had worked as a salesman for \$7.00 a week. Nevertheless he assembled the largest fortune ever known in Fall River. He was an active participant in the industrial and civic affairs in his home town, and was particularly noted for his philanthropy. Mr. Charlton's fortune has been the means of support for many of today's Fall River institutions, including the *Charlton Memorial Hospital*. He has earned the epithet, "Merchant Prince." His chain of 53 stores eventually was combined with the well-known *Woolworth* chain in 1911.

The *Fall River Christian Science Institute* occupied Room 5 on the second floor. Seabury T. Manley was the faith healer. Lizzie was a member. The *Fall River Globe* reported that she became disenchanted with the other ladies for their aloofness. Lizbeth wished to evict the Institute. It at first refused to be moved, but finally left "of its own volition."

Mrs. Edwin F. Gay, photographer, was the tenant in Room 7. Gay's Gallery of Art became one of the principal practitioners in town. Her posed portraits are wonderful reminders of life and times in old Fall River. This venerable business was established before 1870 by Mrs. Gay's husband. It continued until 1944 or 1945.

On the other side of the corridor Charles C. Cook, Insurance and Real Estate, had his office in Room 2. Mr. Cook was Lizzie's financial advisor and real estate manager.

(Continued on Page 19)

BORDEN BANTER

By Sherry Chapman

(Editor's note: Here we go again! This is the third set of Lizzie Borden humorous lines presented to us by Ms. Sherry Chapman. The first was "Borden Jokes" co-authored by her daughter Marla in the January 1999 issue and the second "You Know You're Really a Bordenite When ..." in the October 2001 issue.

All three are unique in their approach and content and all display the outstanding talent of Ms. Chapman that enables her to fix upon known Borden events and turn them into humorous short quotes. She writes, "I think that some humor is important when studying a case such as the Borden one." Well, we do too! It is for this reason, and others, that we have affectionately dubbed her our "Resident Borden Humorist!"

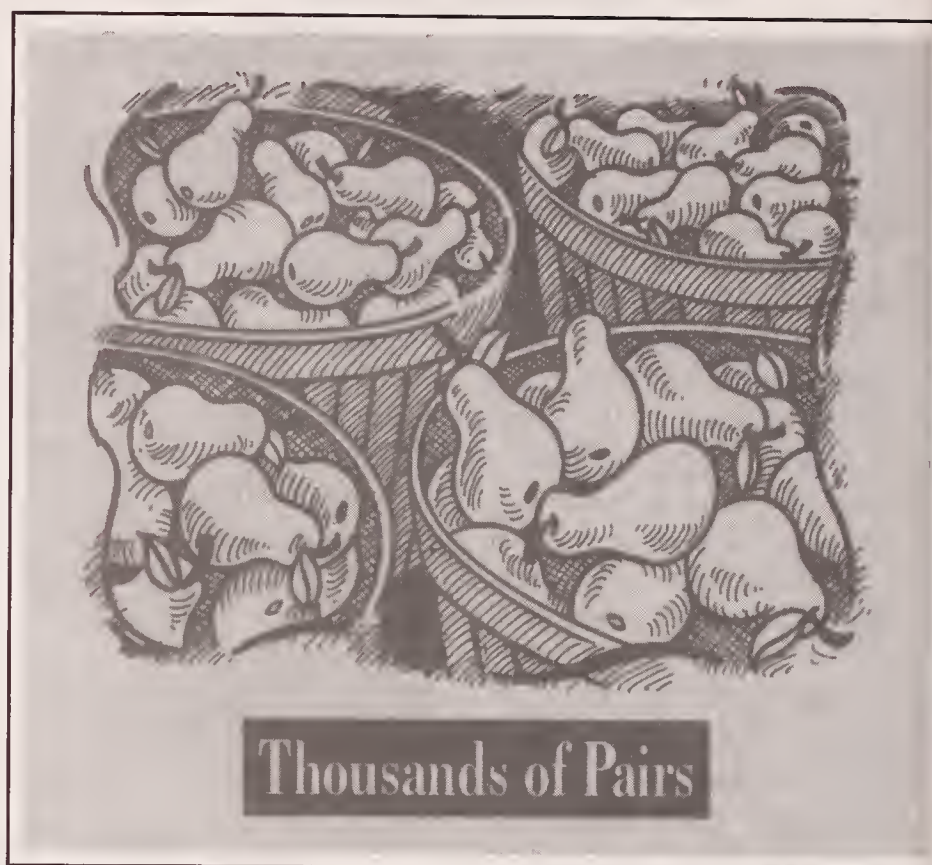
In her cover letter Ms. Chapman writes:

"I could not resist doing "Borden Banter," a humorous piece on some Borden vocabulary words that sometimes some of us do use and some that perhaps we should. I would like to point out that the 5th entry, re[garding] a "bowen," - it's to be kept in mind that his first name was Seabury. Maybe that one is too remote for most, but I'll bet that some of the hardcore Bordenites get it."

Ms. Chapman, I'll bet they get it too!)

Bordenites can and sometimes do speak a different language that's unique to them. Here are some of the words that have been in use, along with some new ones that may catch on.

- ♣ The opposite of "innocent:" *gilty*. Example: "I knew Lizzie did it by the *gilt* on her face."
- ♣ A tip in a murder case: *clew*.
- ♣ Slang for nothing, especially if used at the table: *mutton*.
- ♣ A too-trusting minister is known as a *buck* or a *jubb*.
- ♣ Adjective used to describe one in the medical profession who temporarily loses it: *bowen*. As in, "Look at that med student who passed out back there. He's ___ see? Very *bowen*."
- ♣ Used as a reply to anyone who asks what swear word you just used: *Pshaw*.
- ♣ Any type of men's slippers: *Congress boots*.
- ♣ A note written with invisible ink: No name has been designated as yet, but if you find it it's worth \$500.
- ♣ A person who follows someone to the post office is known as a *vinnicum*.
- ♣ A mild cleaner for fabric garments: *prussic acid*.
- ♣ A person or animal who is dead is "sleeping awhile."



- ♣ Your nation: "My *Ain Countrie*."
- ♣ "Handyman": A man with wild eyes, usually due to drunkenness.
- ♣ Skill in the handling of an axe is having "*abbyility*."
- ♣ To make bitter, especially one's sister against a step-mother: "*Emmbitter*."
- ♣ To correct by altering the text, especially of courtroom testimony is to "*emmend*."
- ♣ Sisters (usually two) that are of different coloring, having hard shells that are difficult to penetrate: "*Emm & Emms*."
- ♣ A nasty, boisterous party with dancing is a *nance*.
- ♣ Used to wash out one's mouth after accidentally ingesting poison: *Lizterine*.

(Editor's note: We welcome Ms. Chapman's 'pears of wisdom' (ouch!) and would like to issue her a standing invitation. Should our resident humorist deign to honor us with any further 'bits of honey,' we would hasten to welcome them!)



DEAR ABBY?

By Sherry Chapman

(Editor's note: As explained in "Miss Lizbeth Borden's Editor Speaks" on page three, this issue is an issue of doubles. We felt it necessary to include this piece, as well as the one by Ms. Chapman on the facing page, since it was inspired by Mr. William L. Pavao's headline piece in the January, 2002 issue, "Abby Durfee Borden: Portrait of a Stepmother.")

At long last, Abby Borden got an unbiased look into her true character. Since 1892 she was indeed "poor Mrs. Borden," described as fat, lazy, tyrannical, sneaky and hateful, with a score of other negative adjectives, a "victim" in more ways than one. Efforts to correct the many possible misconceptions about her were published in the January, 2002 issue of this magazine in the article "Abby Durfee Borden: Portrait of a Stepmother" by William L. Pavao, Jr.

Even Lizzie could not help but put in a good word for her.¹ On June 2, 1893 Alice Russell wrote to William H. Moody, who was appointed by Attorney General Albert E. Pillsbury to serve on the prosecution in the trial of Lizzie Borden. Apparently Mr. Moody had asked Miss Russell for her narrative of the conversation she had with Lizzie on August 3, 1892, the night before the murders.

Miss Russell tells the familiar tale of Lizzie claiming the milk had been poisoned, the house burglarized in broad daylight, and the other sinister 'premonitions' shared with her then-friend. But she continues in her letter to share what Lizzie had to say next - a passage that we seldom if ever have heard, that gives us another precious crumb that helps us flesh out the character of Abby Borden just a little more.

Miss Russell writes of the morning of August 3, when Abby and Andrew had been sick with an unknown malady. "... She told me of Mrs. Borden going over to see Dr. Bowen.

"Mrs. Borden said she was afraid they had been poisoned. Mrs. Borden met Mr. Borden in the entry on her way out, and told him where she was going. Lizzie said 'her father did not like it and said my money shant (sic) pay for it.' But she went over.

"I asked her what Dr. Bowen said she replied, he laughed when Mrs. Borden told what she feared, and said it was not poison.

"Mrs. Borden had told the doctor about Mr. Borden's being sick and he went over to see him. Lizzie said 'the way father used Dr. Bowen - why I was so mortified. I don't know what the doctor will think I am sure.'

"After he had gone Mrs. Borden scolded. She said I am ashamed for you to use Dr. Bowen so. Mr. Borden said 'well I don't want him coming over here Dr. Handy style.' Mrs. B. said he didn't come over here Dr. Handy style. I told him you were sick and he came over to see you and I think it is a shame you can't treat him decent. He is all the neighbors we have got and I think it is too bad."

Apparently Abby was not afraid to speak up to Andrew. Surprisingly, at least according to what Lizzie told Miss Russell, Andrew had no reply to her 'scolding'. It sounds like she gave him a pretty good dressing down, and chances are this was not the first time. One wonders if Andrew were too ill to come back with a reply, or if this was his usual custom upon his wife's fair criticism.



ABBY DURFEE BORDEN

Portrait Photograph

PHOTOGRAPH COURTESY OF THE FALL RIVER HISTORICAL SOCIETY

We also see a glimpse of Abby's caring for the Bowens. She cared that the doctor's feelings might have been hurt by her husband. She cared that they were special neighbors, "all the neighbors we have got", and she sounded hopeful that she not lose their friendship.

It being possible that Lizzie concocted some of the things she told Miss Russell that night, this needs to be looked at carefully. It is doubtful that this part of Lizzie's talk was fabricated. Lizzie did not seem to mind saying negative things about Abby to others. It has a ring of truth because it says something good, for once, about her step-mother.

The reference to Dr. Bowen coming over "Dr. Handy style" makes a comical true-sounding coined phrase a family might make in private, which leads us to wonder just what was meant. Perhaps Dr. Handy had a reputation (just or unjust) of visiting for housecalls he'd charge for, invited or not.

From now on when we read about Abby's wickedness and meanness, we can know that there was at least some kindness behind her, perhaps much more than we now know.

REFERENCES

- 1 *The Knowlton Papers*, edited by Michael Martins and Dennis Binette, 1994, FRHS, Fall River, Massachusetts, pp. 228, 229.

WHY LIZZIE WILL FOREVER HAUNT

By Denise Noe

(Editor's note: Miss Noe is one of the most enthusiastic authors your editor has ever met. Her interests are varied and she writes professionally for many publications. With reasoned thought, she coordinates both historical and present day views. We are pleased to have her return for the second month in a row.)

John R. McGinn, who once lived in the building where the Borden murders took place, and is the grandfather of the present owner, was quoted as saying "the Lizzie Borden thing is dead. We've had lots of interviews and they've come up with *nothin'*. Just rehash and rehash."¹

I believe that Mr. McGinn was wrong. Like England's Jack the Ripper, Lizzie Borden will continue to haunt the world. The reasons for Lizzie's hold on the public imagination fall into two categories. The first is historical and cultural. The acquittal of Lizzie Borden was deeply symptomatic of the late nineteenth century's attitudes about gender, class, and family. The second is logistical. If you assume the hypothesis that Lizzie Borden was the sole murderer, real puzzles exist as to *how* she did it.

The Borden murders occurred toward the end of the Victorian era, in 1892. Woman suffrage was a controversial issue, as was temperance. The suspected Miss Borden was a member of the Women's Christian Temperance Union, an organization that also supported suffrage.

It was a period when the word "lady" carried special weight and meaning. While some have thought that Miss Borden owed her acquittal to being a woman, that is far from the case. Lower-class women, "fallen" or promiscuous women, and those of ethnic minorities, were not "ladies" and, as Sojourner Truth noted in her famous powerful "Ain't I a Woman?" speech, they were neither protected from life's harsh realities nor believed incapable of vileness.

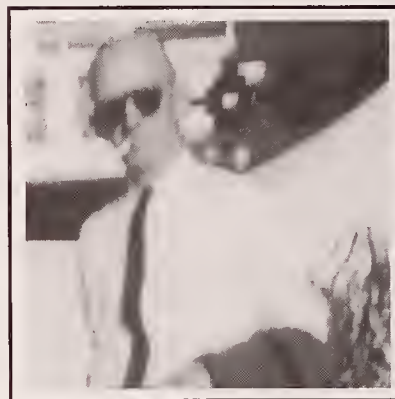
A lady, on the other hand, was considered a creature of special delicacy and refinement. Her moral sense was thought superior. These perceptions were accepted by most people on both sides of the suffrage issue. Indeed, at the time, many pro-suffrage groups had adopted the classist argument that the votes of privileged, upper-class ladies were needed to offset the possibly deleterious effects of having extended the vote to lower-class men.

Lizzie Borden, like her sister Emma, was a lady. Thus, the accused Lizzie was supported by an odd coalition of conservative religious groups and progressive suffragettes.

As is commonly known to students of the Borden affair, Miss Lizzie may have made an unsuccessful attempt to purchase prussic acid, a powerful poison, only a couple of days before the killings. This more "feminine" method of murder would not have shocked to the same degree as a hatchet slaying and, if she had succeeded in making such a purchase and murdered with the prussic acid, I believe Lizzie Borden might well have been convicted and forgotten about.

However, the flamboyantly physical method she settled on assuming again, the major assumption of her guilt -- was literally unbelievable to a large part of the public. Equally hard to stomach was the prospect of putting a lady to death either by hanging or, in what was then a new invention, the electric chair.

One interesting aspect of the case is that there was a brief,



JOHN R. MCGINN
c.1968

PHOTOGRAPH COURTESY OF
MARTHA MCGINN
GRANDDAUGHTER AND OWNER OF
THE LIZZIE BORDEN BED &
BREAKFAST/MUSEUM

botched attempt to "de-lady" Lizzie by suggesting that she was sexually experienced. The "Trickey-McHenry Affair,"² was as unfortunate as its befitting name. Investigator Edwin D. McHenry informed *Boston Globe* reporter Henry Trickey (he was the one who *got* tricked) that the killings had been preceded by a fierce family argument when Andrew Borden discovered that Lizzie was pregnant and screamed that he would throw her out of the house unless she "name[ed] the man who got [her] in trouble."³

The Globe aborted the misbegotten tale the next day in language which symbolized the position of

females at the time. They offered "our heartfelt apology for the inhuman reflection on her honor as a woman."⁴ In those days, an unmarried pregnancy was about as bad for a woman's reputation as the allegation that she had committed a grisly double murder.

When Lizzie Borden went into the courtroom, her ladyhood perfectly intact, the twelve men on the jury had good reason to resist believing the charges. They were, after all, fathers themselves and would draw little comfort from knowing that a lady like their own daughters had butchered her father.

All that said, there *are* genuine problems as to how the murders were perpetrated which mean that the case will never be finally, definitely, solved to the satisfaction of all observers.

HOW DID SHE DO IT?

Lizzie is often quoted as having said at the inquest, "I do not do things in a hurry."⁵ That is probably a misquote as pointed out in the October, 2001 *Lizzie Borden Quarterly* article "Will the Real Inquest Testimony of Lizzie Borden Please Stand Up?" by Terence Duniho and Srefani Koorey. While the *Providence [Daily] Journal's* version of Lizzie Borden's inquest testimony does indeed use these words, the more authoritative *New Bedford Evening Standard* records her as stating, "I can't do anything in a minute." In any case, she was claiming that she was a slow-moving person.

If one accepts the hypothesis of Lizzie guilt as sole murderer, this may have been her biggest lie.

However, it would have competition from a couple of other possible whoppers. One was the tale of the note. Lizzie informed Bridget, and later the authorities, that her step-mother had gone out early that morning to visit a sick friend. No one ever found the note, the boy who delivered it, or the woman who sent it. However, this does not necessarily mean that there was no note since, if the ailing friend happened to be of the upper-class society in Fall River, she might have been extremely averse to involving herself in a scandal. Furthermore, even if the note was phantom, it does not necessarily mean that Lizzie lied about it.

(Continued on Page 20)

A VISIT TO 92 SECOND STREET AND ENVIRONS

By Terence Duniho

(Editor's note: Old-timer Lizzie Borden Quarterly subscribers might very well remember our very first issue in January, 1993. The first article was titled "A Visit to the Borden Home 100 Years Later," by that well-known Borden expert and publisher, Mr. Robert A. Flynn. Then, Jane Rimer came along exactly five years later with her enthusiastic piece, "The House: Through My Eyes." Between those times much had happened ...

When Mr. Flynn made his visit, 92 Second Street was closed to the public and you could count on one hand the number of Borden enthusiasts who had been granted the privilege of a pilgrimage to our own Mecca. Since then, the house has been converted into the "Lizzie Borden Bed & Breakfast/Museum" and opened to the public, with grateful thanks from all of us!

So, here is the second of our set of doubles this issue. Mr. Duniho's documented experience began its trek as an email communication to his correspondents. Your editor considered it as a letter to the letter, but it was actually in a class above that with its rich detail and intelligent documentation, hence, its present format ...)

On February 22, 2002, my wife and I finally made it over to 92 Second Street to spend the night. The date, in addition to being quite appealing number-wise (2-22-2002), was the only date available to us for some time to come. Because my intention is to write a book from Lizzie's point-of-view, we had wanted to stay in Lizzie's bedroom, which includes Emma's bedroom as well. I never did learn what the cost would have been, but I assume it would be measurably more than what we did pay. Of the other rooms available, our next choice was the John Morse Guest Room. John usually stayed in the attic when visiting, and perhaps was only in the guest room the night preceding the Borden murders because he had specifically requested its use. Anyhow, it cost \$219 for one night! However, since it's tax-deductible, and, what's more, something I felt an absolute need to do, we bit the bullet and drove the entire distance of 20 some-odd miles from our home in Providence, Rhode Island!

Check-in time was supposed to begin at 3:00 pm. We were there by 3:15 but no one came to any one of three doors: the front, the side or the print shop next door. However, we thought this quite appropriate as it gave us an experience somewhat similar to that experienced by Andrew Borden on the last day of his life. Leaving our car in the driveway, we went for a walk. Living so close to Fall River, it is probably no surprise to you that I had never taken a walk in that neighborhood! Our first destination was to see the house in which Abby had lived for eight years before marrying Andrew and of which she was half-owner at her death: 45 Fourth Street. Nowadays this only requires walking half a block south to the corner of Spring and Second Streets, turning left (east) and walking two blocks. But in Lizzie's day, Spring ended at Second Street and did not extend any further east. This means that when Abby would pay a visit to her half-sister, or other family members at 45 Fourth, she would either have to walk north to Borden, two blocks east to Fourth and then one block south. Or she could have walked south to Rodman, two blocks east, and then north to 45 Fourth. This route would have been



92 SECOND STREET

- AS IT LOOKS TODAY -

PHOTOGRAPH COURTESY OF JEANNINE H. BERTOLET

quite a bit longer than the route via Borden, so unless she was able to cut across Second Street to Third to Fourth, through people's yards (not totally unlikely), it is more probable that she was in the habit of going to and from 45 Fourth Street by way of Borden.

Thanks to Leonard Rebello's article, *The Whitehead House Discovered*, in the January 2002 issue of the *Lizzie Borden Quarterly*, which we had thoughtfully brought with us, we had no difficulty in locating "Abby's house." Interestingly enough, on the same lot is a much larger house at the front (hugging the northeast corner of the lot). This, as we also learned from the article, was built beginning in 1897, with "Abby's house" being moved further back on the same lot. So the house in which Abby's half-sister lived was the one which is now further back from the street, and near the sidewalk of Spring Street, since Spring extends as far as Fifth, where it continues another two blocks as Brow Street.

(Continued on Page 21)

THE TRIAL TESTIMONY OF MR. JOHN VINNICUM MORSE - PART III

PERMISSION TO TRANSCRIBE OFFICIAL BORDEN TRIAL TRANSCRIPT EXCERPTS WAS GRANTED TO THE LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY ON FEBRUARY 11, 2000
PERMISSION WAS GRANTED BY THE OFFICE OF JUDGE SUSAN DEL VECCHIO, CHIEF JUSTICE OF THE MASSACHUSETTS SUPERIOR COURT

(Editor's note: We greatly acknowledge the talents and efforts of Mr. Harry Widdows from Spartanburg, South Carolina for the conversion of the original trial transcript into digital text which enables us to bring it to you.)

Q. Did Mr. and Mrs. Borden remain in the sitting-room until you started to go away or not?

A. Mr. Borden was in and out of the room several times. Mr. Borden and Mrs. Borden were both in and out. Mr. Borden was there most of the time.

Q. I didn't quite understand you.

A. Mr. and Mrs. Borden were out and in several times, but Mr. Borden was there most of the time.

Q. Did you notice where Mr. Borden went when he went out of the sitting-room?

A. I don't know any more than he went out of the east door, out into the kitchen. I don't know where he went from there.

Q. Did you notice where Mrs. Borden went when she left the sitting-room?

A. She went into the front hall.

Q. Did you notice any other place she went to except into the front hall?

A. I did not.

Q. How long was it after she went into the front hall before she returned again to the sitting-room, if you can tell?

A. I didn't see her after that.

Q. How long was that before you went away, that Mrs. Borden went into the front hall?

A. I don't think more than some fifteen or twenty minutes.

Q. Did you see Mrs. Borden doing anything by way of housework before she went into the front hall?

A. Before she went in there she was dusting.

Q. And dusting in which rooms?

A. The sitting-room.

Q. Did you see her dusting in any other room?

A. I did not.

Q. Did you see her in the dining room at all?

A. Not after breakfast.

Q. And she was dusting with what?

A. A feather duster.

Q. Do you know whether she had anything on her head as she was dusting?

A. I think not.

Q. Did you notice, Mr. Morse?

A. I didn't notice anything.

Q. To put my question again, did you notice whether she did or not have anything on her head?

A. I think she did not.

Q. What time did you go away from the house on the Thursday morning?

A. Well, fifteen or twenty minutes to nine.

Q. In going from the sitting-room out of doors, where did you go and out of which door did you go?

A. Went out the rear door.

Q. That is what is called the screen door?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did any one accompany you?

A. Mr. Borden.

Q. As you went out did you see Bridget?

A. I did.

Q. Where was she?

A. In the kitchen.

Q. What was she doing in the kitchen?

A. I don't know; I don't recollect what she was doing.

Q. Won't you describe what occurred at the door, not stating what anyone said to you, but what occurred at the door as you went out?

A. I unhooked the door and went out, and Mr. Borden hooked it.

Q. Will you describe how that door was hooked as you unhooked it to go out?

A. A small hook right at the side, and hooks right in the casing.

Q. Was it inside or out?

A. Inside.

Q. And hooked into what?

A. Into the casing of the door.

Q. Well, into some steel or iron or metallic instrument?

A. No, I think not. I think it is just into the wood--I think it is.

Q. Do you mean to say that there was not any metallic or iron instrument into which it hooked--a ring of any sort?

A. My recollection is there was nothing there but the wood and that screw that goes into it.

Q. The screw is precisely what I wish to call attention to. Describe the screw into which it hooked?

A. A small round screw, a round place where the hook goes into it, the same as this would be.

Q. A screw, and on the end of the screw an eye for the hook to go in?

A. Yes.

Q. Are you familiar with the premises at the present time, Mr. Morse?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Is it or not the same arrangement that is there now?

A. Yes, sir; the same, without it has been changed within a few days.

Q. Now then, as you came to the door you say it was locked--it was hooked?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Who unhooked it, you or Mr. Borden?

A. I did; I unhooked it.

Q. Did you have any conversation with Mr. Borden at the door? I don't ask you what was said, but did he speak to you or you to him at the door?

A. He spoke to me.

Q. After you crossed the threshold of the door did you see what was done with respect to it, whether it was closed or not?

A. I saw him hook it.

Q. Did you notice where Mr. Borden went after he hooked the door?

A. I do not.

Q. You turned and went away, did you?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Now without any detail, where were you until you returned again that morning to the Borden house; in the city of Fall River or elsewhere?

A. The city of Fall River.

Q. Where did you first go?

A. The Post Office.

Q. And from there where did you go?

A. Went to Weybosset Street.

Q. To visit some one?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Whom did you visit there?

A. A nephew and niece. I went to see them, there was only one of them there.

Q. Where is Weybosset Street with respect to the Borden house?

A. It is just off of Pleasant Street, and probably a mile or such a matter from Pleasant Street east.

Q. And that does not give us the distance from the Borden house. Will you give us the distance from the Borden house or about the distance?

A. Well, probably a mile and a quarter.

Q. Did you walk there or drive there?

A. I walked there.

Q. Did you visit any one there?

A. I did.

Q. I don't remember whether you told me whom you visited?

A. I went up to see a nephew and niece, but the nephew wasn't there.

Q. Did you see any one in that house?

A. I saw my niece.

Q. And her name is what?

A. Morse.

Q. Do you recall how long you stayed there?

A. I left there about twenty minutes past eleven.

Q. Did you go anywhere else before you returned to the Borden

house?

A. No, sir.

Q. You did return to the Borden house, did you, that morning?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. How did you come?

A. On the cars, horse cars.

Q. Horse or electric cars?

A. Horse cars.

Q. Did the horse cars go by the house on Weybosset Street?

A. It is just off a short distance from Pleasant Street where I went.

Q. That is to say, you could take the cars not far from where you were visiting?

A. Yes, probably within ten or fifteen rods.

Q. Did you have to wait for a car or did one come right along?

A. One came right along.

Q. Where did you leave the car?

A. At the corner of Pleasant and Second Streets.

Q. That is not far from the Borden house, I believe?

A. Not a great ways.

Q. How did you go to the Borden house then?

A. Walked.

Q. Immediately?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. When you got to the Borden house did anything attract your attention at first?

A. No, sir.

Q. Where did you first go?

A. Went into the back door, round the rear part of the house, to a pear tree.

Q. Did you do anything out there?

A. Picked up two or three pears.

Q. Did you begin to eat them or not?

A. I ate part of one of them.

Q. Where did you go then?

A. Went to the house.

Q. When you got to the house were you informed by any one that something had happened there?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. In consequence of that information did you go into the house?

A. I did.

Q. Which one of Mr. and Mrs. Borden did you first see?

A. Saw Miss Lizzie.

Q. You misunderstood my question. Which one of the victims did you first see?

A. Oh yes; Mr. Borden.

Q. After you saw Mr. Borden where did you go?

A. I went part ways up the front stairs.

Q. Won't you describe the journey up the front stairs and what

THE TRIAL TESTIMONY OF MR. JOHN VINNICUM MORSE - PART III

PERMISSION TO TRANSCRIBE OFFICIAL BORDEN TRIAL TRANSCRIPT EXCERPTS WAS GRANTED TO THE LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY ON FEBRUARY 11, 2000
PERMISSION WAS GRANTED BY THE OFFICE OF JUDGE SUSAN DEL VECCHIO, CHIEF JUSTICE OF THE MASSACHUSETTS SUPERIOR COURT

(Editor's note: We greatly acknowledge the talents and efforts of Mr. Harry Widdows from Spartanburg, South Carolina for the conversion of the original trial transcript into digital text which enables us to bring it to you.)

Q. Did Mr. and Mrs. Borden remain in the sitting-room until you started to go away or not?

A. Mr. Borden was in and out of the room several times. Mr. Borden and Mrs. Borden were both in and out. Mr. Borden was there most of the time.

Q. I didn't quite understand you.

A. Mr. and Mrs. Borden were out and in several times, but Mr. Borden was there most of the time.

Q. Did you notice where Mr. Borden went when he went out of the sitting-room?

A. I don't know any more than he went out of the east door, out into the kitchen. I don't know where he went from there.

Q. Did you notice where Mrs. Borden went when she left the sitting-room?

A. She went into the front hall.

Q. Did you notice any other place she went to except into the front hall?

A. I did not.

Q. How long was it after she went into the front hall before she returned again to the sitting-room, if you can tell?

A. I didn't see her after that.

Q. How long was that before you went away, that Mrs. Borden went into the front hall?

A. I don't think more than some fifteen or twenty minutes.

Q. Did you see Mrs. Borden doing anything by way of housework before she went into the front hall?

A. Before she went in there she was dusting.

Q. And dusting in which rooms?

A. The sitting-room.

Q. Did you see her dusting in any other room?

A. I did not.

Q. Did you see her in the dining room at all?

A. Not after breakfast.

Q. And she was dusting with what?

A. A feather duster.

Q. Do you know whether she had anything on her head as she was dusting?

A. I think not.

Q. Did you notice, Mr. Morse?

A. I didn't notice anything.

Q. To put my question again, did you notice whether she did or not have anything on her head?

A. I think she did not.

Q. What time did you go away from the house on the Thursday morning?

A. Well, fifteen or twenty minutes to nine.

Q. In going from the sitting-room out of doors, where did you go and out of which door did you go?

A. Went out the rear door.

Q. That is what is called the screen door?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did any one accompany you?

A. Mr. Borden.

Q. As you went out did you see Bridget?

A. I did.

Q. Where was she?

A. In the kitchen.

Q. What was she doing in the kitchen?

A. I don't know; I don't recollect what she was doing.

Q. Won't you describe what occurred at the door, not stating what anyone said to you, but what occurred at the door as you went out?

A. I unhooked the door and went out, and Mr. Borden hooked it.

Q. Will you describe how that door was hooked as you unhooked it to go out?

A. A small hook right at the side, and hooks right in the casing.

Q. Was it inside or out?

A. Inside.

Q. And hooked into what?

A. Into the casing of the door.

Q. Well, into some steel or iron or metallic instrument?

A. No, I think not. I think it is just into the wood--I think it is.

Q. Do you mean to say that there was not any metallic or iron instrument into which it hooked--a ring of any sort?

A. My recollection is there was nothing there but the wood and that screw that goes into it.

Q. The screw is precisely what I wish to call attention to. Describe the screw into which it hooked?

A. A small round screw, a round place where the hook goes into it, the same as this would be.

Q. A screw, and on the end of the screw an eye for the hook to go in?

A. Yes.

Q. Are you familiar with the premises at the present time, Mr. Morse?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Is it or not the same arrangement that is there now?

A. Yes, sir; the same, without it has been changed within a few days.

Q. Now then, as you came to the door you say it was locked--it was hooked?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Who unhooked it, you or Mr. Borden?

A. I did; I unhooked it.

Q. Did you have any conversation with Mr. Borden at the door? I don't ask you what was said, but did he speak to you or you to him at the door?

A. He spoke to me.

Q. After you crossed the threshold of the door did you see what was done with respect to it, whether it was closed or not?

A. I saw him hook it.

Q. Did you notice where Mr. Borden went after he hooked the door?

A. I do not.

Q. You turned and went away, did you?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Now without any detail, where were you until you returned again that morning to the Borden house; in the city of Fall River or elsewhere?

A. The city of Fall River.

Q. Where did you first go?

A. The Post Office.

Q. And from there where did you go?

A. Went to Weybosset Street.

Q. To visit some one?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Whom did you visit there?

A. A nephew and niece. I went to see them, there was only one of them there.

Q. Where is Weybosset Street with respect to the Borden house?

A. It is just off of Pleasant Street, and probably a mile or such a matter from Pleasant Street east.

Q. And that does not give us the distance from the Borden house. Will you give us the distance from the Borden house or about the distance?

A. Well, probably a mile and a quarter.

Q. Did you walk there or drive there?

A. I walked there.

Q. Did you visit any one there?

A. I did.

Q. I don't remember whether you told me whom you visited?

A. I went up to see a nephew and niece, but the nephew wasn't there.

Q. Did you see any one in that house?

A. I saw my niece.

Q. And her name is what?

A. Morse.

Q. Do you recall how long you stayed there?

A. I left there about twenty minutes past eleven.

Q. Did you go anywhere else before you returned to the Borden

house?

A. No, sir.

Q. You did return to the Borden house, did you, that morning?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. How did you come?

A. On the cars, horse cars.

Q. Horse or electric cars?

A. Horse cars.

Q. Did the horse cars go by the house on Weybosset Street?

A. It is just off a short distance from Pleasant Street where I went.

Q. That is to say, you could take the cars not far from where you were visiting?

A. Yes, probably within ten or fifteen rods.

Q. Did you have to wait for a car or did one come right along?

A. One came right along.

Q. Where did you leave the car?

A. At the corner of Pleasant and Second Streets.

Q. That is not far from the Borden house, I believe?

A. Not a great ways.

Q. How did you go to the Borden house then?

A. Walked.

Q. Immediately?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. When you got to the Borden house did anything attract your attention at first?

A. No, sir.

Q. Where did you first go?

A. Went into the back door, round the rear part of the house, to a pear tree.

Q. Did you do anything out there?

A. Picked up two or three pears.

Q. Did you begin to eat them or not?

A. I ate part of one of them.

Q. Where did you go then?

A. Went to the house.

Q. When you got to the house were you informed by any one that something had happened there?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. In consequence of that information did you go into the house?

A. I did.

Q. Which one of Mr. and Mrs. Borden did you first see?

A. Saw Miss Lizzie.

Q. You misunderstood my question. Which one of the victims did you first see?

A. Oh yes; Mr. Borden.

Q. After you saw Mr. Borden where did you go?

A. I went part ways up the front stairs.

Q. Won't you describe the journey up the front stairs and what

you saw?

A. I went up far enough so I could look under the bed where I slept the night before, and I saw Mrs. Borden lying there with blood on her face.

Q. About how far up the stairs did you have to go in order to see Mrs. Borden?

A. Why, probably two-thirds of the way so I could get my head above ---

Q. Where was your head with respect to the floor of the hall when you saw Mrs. Borden?

A. Well, might have been six or eight inches or ten above the floor.

Q. At that time you had been informed that she was in that room, had you?

A. I had.

Q. Did Mr. Borden have a farm at any place in the neighborhood of Fall River?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. In what town?

A. Swansea.

Q. Before you went away upon the morning of Thursday had you seen Miss Lizzie Borden at all?

A. On Thursday?

Q. Yes, Thursday.

A. That is the day of the murder?

Q. Yes.

A. Yes, I saw her.

Q. Possibly I didn't make myself clear to you. I mean before Mr. Borden let you out of the door had you seen Miss Lizzie Borden?

A. No, sir.

Q. Then you didn't see her until after your return and your hearing of the homicide?

A. No, sir, I didn't see her previous to that.

Q. Had you seen Miss Lizzie Borden at all from the time you arrived Wednesday morning up to the time you left Thursday morning?

A. I did not.

Q. Can you tell who was in the kitchen or dining-room or sitting-room when you got there, Mr. Morse?

A. When I got there the day of the murder, you mean?

Q. I mean after the murder, the homicide?

A. Mr. Sawyer was at the door, and I think Bridget Sullivan.

Q. Were there any people in the house that you now recall?

A. Dr. Bowen and two or three policemen.

Q. Do you know who those officers were?

A. I don't.

Q. Were there any ladies there at that time?

A. I think Mrs. Churchill was there. I think she was.

Q. Do you know Miss Russell?

A. I do.

Q. Was she there?

A. I think she was.

CROSS EXAMINATION

Q. (By Mr. Robinson.) I have only a few questions, Mr. Morse. If I understand it correctly, on Thursday afternoon you arrived at the house about half past one?

A. I did.

Q. That was past the dining hour?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. So you didn't sit at the table at dinner with anybody in the family?

A. No, sir. They were in the room with me, not at the table.

Q. Mr. and Mrs. Borden?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And do you know of your own knowledge who provided the meal that was set before you?

A. Mrs. Borden brought it in herself.

Q. Did you see Bridget Sullivan there at that time?

A. I did not.

Q. Did you see her that afternoon?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you see her that night after your return?

A. No, sir.

Q. Then you came there at half past one and had your dinner; and how long did you remain after that before you went away?

A. I think it was nearly four o'clock.

Q. You were gone until what time in the evening?

A. 15 or 20 minutes to nine.

Q. And from twenty minutes of nine until the hour of retiring you remained in the sitting-room with Mr. and Mrs. Borden?

A. Mrs. Borden didn't remain there a great while before she retired.

Q. She went to bed earlier?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you know whether they were sick at that time or not?

A. They were.

Q. Do you know whether Miss Lizzie was or not?

A. Mrs. Borden told me she was.

MR. MOODY. He did not see her.

Q. Were you told so by Mrs. Borden?

MR. MOODY. Wait a moment, Mr. Witness. I pray your Honors' judgment.

MASON, C. J. In the opinion of the Court, it will be hearsay evidence.

Q. Then until your hour of retiring, I think you said (perhaps it may be repetition) that you didn't see Bridget Sullivan that night?

A. I did not.

Q. And to make it plain, from half past one when you first came

until you went to bed that night, you didn't see her at all?

A. I did not.

Q. Do you know whether or not she was in the house, of your own knowledge?

A. Not of my knowledge.

Q. Do you know from your acquaintance there where her room in the house was?

A. Bridget's room?

Q. Yes.

A. In the attic in the southeast room.

Q. Would that be above that occupied by Mr. and Mrs. Borden?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. After you arrived in the evening at 20 minutes of nine did you and the other two remain in the sitting-room all the time until you went to bed?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Or until on Mrs. Borden's part she went to bed?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you recall whether or not as a matter of positive recollection you had a light in the sitting-room that evening?

A. I don't think there was any.

Q. You don't think there was any light in the sitting-room?

A. No, sir.

Q. This was a warm evening in August?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. You sat there in the sitting-room without having any artificial light?

A. I think there was no light. That is my recollection.

Q. Do you recall, Mr. Morse, whether the door leading from the sitting-room into the hall was open during the time you sat there?

A. I think it was open.

Q. You think it was?

A. I know it.

Q. Whether it was swung wide open?

A. I think it was.

Q. Do you recall whether or not there was any hall light?

A. I think there was a hall light.

Q. Now, as you sat there in the sitting-room, I understand from your answer that you were not seated so that you could see who did come up and go into the room above?

A. No, sir, I didn't. I sat in a position so I couldn't see into the hall.

Q. Do you recall in what part of that sitting-room you sat?

A. I sat near the middle, that is, more south, but the middle of the room east and west, right in front of a table that stands there.

Q. You know nothing whatever about that front door that night, about its fastening at all, do you, after you came in?

A. I do not.

Q. You paid no attention to it?

A. No attention.

Q. You heard nothing about that to give you any information?

A. No, sir.

Q. Somebody had come in and went up stairs, passed up, according to the sounds which you heard, into the room overhead, which was Miss Lizzie's room?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you recall as a matter of recollection whether there was anything said by the person who came in so that you have a recollection of it?

A. I did not hear anything.

Q. You do not recollect that?

A. No, sir.

Q. This person, whoever it was, had gone up stairs before you retired?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. About what time did you go?

A. It might have been ten or a few minutes after. The clock struck before we retired.

Q. All you know is you went up stairs and went into your room?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And as you went into your room you found the door open?

MR. MOODY. He did not say that.

MR. ROBINSON. (To Witness) I think you said that you found the door to the spare room open as you went up?

A. Yes, sir, I think it was open as I went up.

Q. And you left it open as you slept?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And all you have to say of the other door is that it is the entrance into Miss Borden's room and was closed?

A. Yes.

Q. There was nothing in its appearance to distinguish it from the ordinary closed door?

A. No, sir.

Q. There was nothing in its appearance to indicate it was locked?

A. No, sir.

Q. Nothing of any consequence to us here transpired until the next morning so far as you know?

A. No, sir.

Q. Were you up in the morning before any one else in the house?

A. I don't know who might have been up; there was no one up down stairs; I did not hear noise, so I suppose I was the first one up.

Q. As you went to bed at night you went up one way to go up stairs and Mr. Borden went the other way, and in going to the back stairs you would pass out of the same little hall way that you would take if going out the side door?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you recollect whether or not Bridget was up that morning before you came down stairs?
MR. MOODY. How can he know?

A. I don't know.

Q. If you do not know you cannot tell.
A. I don't know.

Q. Do you know whether you heard any sounds in the kitchen indicating any one was there?
A. I did not.

Q. When did you first see her that morning?
A. At breakfast time.

Q. As you went into the dining room?
A. After I sat down to the table.

Q. Did you go out the evening before into the kitchen?
A. No, sir.

Q. Do you know whether or not there was any lamp left lighted on the kitchen table or in any part of the kitchen?
A. I don't know.

Q. You have been asked about the breakfast. You three sat round that dining table there in the dining room practically as it is now?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And was the breakfast room furnished about as you see it now?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. The same furniture?
A. About the same furniture. I don't see any difference.

Q. And, Mr. Morse, generally how was the table set, that is what kind of dishes or ware were on the table?
A. I think it was white ware.

Q. What did you have to eat with--the ordinary appliances, knives and forks and spoons?
A. Knives and forks, yes.

Q. As I understand you had for breakfast mutton and bread and coffee and cakes and bananas?
A. Yes.

Q. And you did not know but that you had Johnnie-cake too?
A. I don't recollect about that.

Q. You would not say you did not have?
A. No, sir.

Q. That was the bill of fare, was it?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. You and all partook of what was there, as I understand it?
A. I think so; I did not notice what they were eating.

Q. You did not scrimp yourself at all?
A. No, sir.

Q. It was a good fair breakfast?
A. Plenty of it.

Q. There was nothing mean or stingy about it?
A. No, I don't think there was.

Q. You think you spent about half an hour there which would bring it round to about half past seven when you got through breakfast?
A. I think so.

Q. You saw Bridget, you said, when you sat at the table. What occasioned that?
A. Mrs. Borden called her when she wanted coffee or anything and she went in and out several times.

Q. How did she call her?
A. Bell.

Q. Didn't call her by her voice?
A. No, sir.

Q. Was she in and out during the breakfast?
A. In and out two or three times.

Q. Did you hear any conversation between Mrs. Borden and Bridget that morning?
A. Spoke to her about washing some windows.

Q. What did she say?
A. Said she would.

Q. That is Bridget said she would?
A. Yes.

Q. Give what Mrs. Borden said to Bridget?
A. I think she said in this way: "Bridget, I want you to wash these windows to-day."

Q. And about what time was that said?
A. At breakfast time.

Q. While you were seated at the table?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. I will ask you whether you have observed anything in the use of the front door in regard to the spring lock, Mr. Morse?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. What is that? State it plainly so that we can hear it. You do not speak quite loudly enough, if you will let me say.
A. Well, if you shut the door hard, the spring lock would catch; if you didn't, it would not.

Q. Then if it did not catch----
A. You could open it without any trouble.

Q. Push it, or turn the ordinary knob, and it would come right open. And when had you noticed that?
A. That was after the tragedy.

Q. Did you specially examine it to see about that? Was your attention called to it?
A. It was not called especially to that. I went to try the door, and it was unfastened, and I found afterwards by slamming it hard it would catch, and if you didn't it would not; and I took the lock off, had it fastened back so it would catch, and a new one was put on while I was there.

Q. A new one was put on?
A. I had it put on.

Q. And do you recall now that the old lock is there and a new latch also?

- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. And you are now referring to the one that was on August 4, and did not work?
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. Now if I understand you, it was simply by mere accident that you discovered that the lock behaved so?
- A. On my part?
- Q. Yes.
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. And then, having discovered that it did not lock unless the door was slammed, did you try it again?
- A. I did.
- Q. And what was the result?
- A. The same; you could open it and go out without any trouble.
- Q. Did you try it more than once?
- A. Yes, sir, I tried it several times.
- Q. And that, you say, was after the tragedy?
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. Do you recall about how long?
- A. Oh, within a day or two.
- Q. And do you recall also whether any other person was present at the time--at the time it was tried, either when you---
- A. I don't think there were when I tried it.
- Q. You don't think there were. You came back--passing over all the intermediate time from the breakfast, or after the time you went out, having your breakfast and finishing about half past seven, I think you say you left about fifteen to twenty minutes before nine?
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. Going out the side door?
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. Not going out the front door at all that morning?
- A. No, sir.
- Q. Not going into the front hall after you came down stairs that morning?
- A. Oh, I stood in the door and took my hat off the rack, which is right close; that is all.
- Q. Only to get your hat, but no further?
- A. No, sir.
- Q. You are sure you did not go up stairs?
- A. No, sir, I was not up there at all.
- Q. Then you passed out the side door, yourself unhooking the door?
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. Then you preceded Mr. Borden as you stepped out into that narrow hall?
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. And then he went with you and closed the door?
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. And you passed out?
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. Whether or not the door was locked behind you, do you know?
- A. He hooked it after I went out.
- Q. That is, that simple wire hook that is there?
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. The wooden door, the solid door, so far as you know, was open when you went there?
- A. That was open.
- Q. And remained open as you passed out, so far as you know?
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. Did you go directly out onto Second Street?
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. Now, caring nothing about the intermediate time, can you tell us about what hour you arrived on your return?
- A. I think about twenty minutes to eleven.
- Q. You don't mean eleven, do you?
- A. Twelve.
- Q. About twenty minutes of twelve?
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. And how did you approach the house, by what street?
- A. Second street.
- Q. And to which door did you come?
- A. I went into the rear door, back door.
- Q. Now, as you passed into the yard by that Second street entrance,--and that is the only entrance on that street, is it?
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. Did you notice anybody about there, particularly?
- A. Not to draw my attention at all.
- Q. That is a well traveled thoroughfare, is it not, of the city?
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. A great many carriages and teams are passing, from time to time there?
- A. Yes, sir, of all kinds.
- Q. And it is a very noisy street, isn't it?
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. So that if you are in the house and the windows are open, you can hear the clatter and noise of that street?
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. And at that season of the year the windows were open?
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. I think you say that as you came into the side entrance you saw somebody: and who was that?
- A. Mr. Sawyer.
- Q. I do not ask you what was said. Where was he?
- A. He was right at the door. He came, and I ----
- Q. On the inside or the outside, Mr. Morse?
- A. He was on the outside.
- Q. Was anybody with him?
- A. To the best of my recollection, Bridget Sullivan.
- Q. And she on the outside too?

A. No, she was inside, sitting on the stairs.

Q. I beg pardon.

A. She was on the inside, sitting on the stairs.

Q. Mr. Sawyer stood out just on the top step, the broad step?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And she was seated. The stair case comes right down close to the door?

A. Comes right down close to the door.

Q. So that they were near enough to have conversation with each other?

A. Yes, sir; within 3 feet.

Q. I do not ask what was said, but did you notice whether there was conversation between them as you arrived there?

A. No, I didn't hear any.

Q. And you said that you went out to the pear tree?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Well, they were not there, were they, when you went by, or were they?

A. I didn't see them outside when I went by.

Q. That is, as you came you came up the walk, and instead of passing up the steps you went right around behind the house to the pear tree?

A. I went right around to the tree.

Q. Can you locate the pear tree to which you went; I do not mean the particular one, but which part of the yard, Mr. Morse?

A. It stands to the south part of the yard, not a great ways from the end of the grape vine arbor.

Q. That would be southerly of the southerly end of the grape vine arbor?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Well, you stopped there because there were pears there?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Then how long do you think you were out there?

A. I don't think I was there more than two or three minutes.

Q. Then you came back to that side door?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And then you found Mr. Sawyer and Miss Sullivan, as I understand it?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And on the outside there was no one but Mr. Sawyer?

A. I didn't see anybody but him.

Q. And on the inside nobody but Miss Sullivan?

A. That is all I saw.

Q. And was there anybody else around in the yard at that time?

A. I don't think there was, to my recollection.

Q. Well, you went out to this pear tree, which, taking the house as it stands there, was, if I may ask you, about in the middle of the open space?

A. The house is?

Q. No, sir, you do not get my idea. The pear tree is about in the

middle of the yard space behind the house?

A. Well, it is more southerly than it would be in the centre,--more southerly.

Q. Now, as you were out there at the pear tree, if there was anybody in the yard, any policemen, were you in a position to see them?

A. Yes, sir, if they were anywhere on three sides of the house I should have seen them,--that is, on two sides, east side and south side, I should have seen them. I wouldn't have seen them on the north side.

Q. That is, away over to the street?

A. No, sir.

Q. But as you passed into the yard there was nobody toward Mrs. Churchill's?

A. No, sir.

Q. And as you passed to the south part of the yard there was nobody there in sight?

A. No, sir.

Q. And looking out toward Mrs. Kelley's corner, there was nobody there on that side, was there?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you notice whether the barn door was open or not?

A. I think it was closed.

Q. And at that time did you hear anybody walking around in the barn?

A. I did not.

Q. Are you pretty positive that there wasn't anybody in the yard then except Mr. Sawyer that you afterwards saw?

A. I didn't see anybody else.

Q. You were not doing anything else except going there to get a pear?

A. That is all.

Q. Well, now, we will come back to the side door, and without giving the conversation, what did you do?

A. Went up the steps.

Q. Well, Mr. Sawyer,--did he go in?

A. Did Mr. Sawyer go in?

Q. Did he follow you in?

A. No, sir, I think not.

Q. And what did Miss Sullivan do?

A. Nothing as I know of.

Q. Continued to sit there?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And then where did you go?

A. Went into the sitting room.

Q. The sitting room first?

A. Yes, sir. Well, I went into the kitchen and from there in; of course I had to go there.

Q. Yes, I understand. And after going into the sitting room did you go into the dining room?

A. Not at that time.

Q. Did you go upstairs before you went into the dining room?
A. I went part way up.

Q. And did you go up stairs before you saw Miss Lizzie?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Now when did you first see her, and where?
A. When I came down after I went part way up the stairs, she was sitting in the dining room on the lounge.

Q. Do you know who were there with her?
A. I don't think there was anyone: there was no one on the lounge with her.

Q. Don't you remember there were some ladies there?
A. Well, I say there was Mrs. Churchill and Miss Russell. They were in the other room: they were not in there.

Q. Were they in the sitting room?
A. They were in the sitting room when I went in.

Q. Where Mr. Borden was lying on the sofa?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you remain there then from that time on, at the house?
A. I was about the house and the yard all the afternoon.

Q. I think you said that there were, as you remembered it, two or three policemen there?
A. They were in the house.

Q. After you got in the house?
A. In the house.

Q. And you do not know who they were?
A. I do not; I was not acquainted with them at all.

Q. And in what part of the house were they?
A. They were in the sitting room.

Q. Just to go back a minute,--it escaped it my attention. In the yard, against the back fence, the Chagnon fence, were there some piles of lumber at that time?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Have you seen them within a few days?
A. Not to notice them, I have not.

Q. You have seen them a good while along after this affair?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Are they substantially,--I do not mean exactly, but are they substantially as they were then?
A. I think they are.

Q. Did you see any of the blood spots upon the parlor door,--that is, the door leading from the sitting room into the parlor?
A. I did.

Q. And they were washed off, were they not?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. At some time,--do you remember what day?
A. If I recollect right, it was of a Sunday.

Q. They had been on there all day Thursday, the balance of the day, and Friday and Saturday?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. And were they washed off by Miss Emma?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Were you present?
MR. KNOWLTON: Was that inquiry as to the parlor door?
MR. ROBINSON: The door leading from the sitting room into the parlor --
(To the witness) directly behind the head of Mr. Borden as he lay upon the lounge?

A. Yes, sir, west of it.

Q. Did you notice on what part--well, I will not follow that now. Did you notice the officers making any examination of any part of the premises at any time you were there?
A. Yes, I was with them part of the time.

Q. Where did they go?
A. Went up in the second and third story.

Q. And what did they look at?
A. Looked at everything, I guess.

Q. They did? Well, were they thorough about it?
A. I think so.

Q. Well, for instance, what did you see them do in the way of making a search?
A. I see them overhauling everything. I unlocked a chest or a trunk or something of that kind up in the attic that they couldn't get into.

Q. Did they have full opportunity to look about?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Was there anybody there to stop them?
A. No, sir.

Q. Did you impose any objection?
A. No, sir.

Q. And nobody did?
A. Not that I know of.

Q. To your observation, as they went about, they had free search?
A. They had free access to everything.

MR. KNOWLTON: This was the day of the homicide?

Q. This was Thursday, right after you got there?
A. Well, I think it was Friday that I was with them up stairs.

Q. Friday?
A. I think so.

Q. On Thursday afternoon didn't they search some?
A. They searched themselves: I was not with them then.

Q. At any time did they search below stairs in the cellar when you were present?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Well, where did they go then?
A. Went out to the barn.

Q. No, in the cellar I am first speaking of?
A. They went all over it.

Q. What do you mean by going all over it?

(Continued on Page 23)

ARTHUR PHILLIPS' ...

(Continued from Page 1)

However, as I will explain shortly, further investigation has put that idea to rest. It is relatively certain that Phillips himself is behind virtually the entire essay.

CLEWS TO CONSIDER

The Foreword to the Phillips essay was written by Norman S. Easton, "Joint Author and Editor," and the husband of Phillips' sister. His choice of words suggests that Phillips' narrative about the Borden Murders may not have been completed at the time of Phillips' death in 1941, but nothing is said to explicitly resolve exactly who wrote what:

The author had outlined the subjects to be considered in the first two fascicles. He died while his plans for the third volume were under consideration. He left completed manuscripts, which are here presented along with chapters prepared largely from his notes or a knowledge of his intentions. . . . The third fascicle is the last of the series and covers all but two or three of the topics which the author had evidently planned to discuss.

When I first began doing research for this article, the words "...chapters prepared largely from his notes or a knowledge of his intentions" combined with the somewhat startling presence of so many factual errors had led me to think that perhaps Easton had been the primary author of the Borden Murders narrative. But after comparing the book version with an article by Phillips that appeared in the *New Bedford Evening Standard Times* on May 13, 1934 (seven years before Phillips' death), I have concluded that Phillips himself deserves whatever credit or criticism which may be rightfully registered for or against both versions.²

About half way through his short narrative, Phillips appears to promise his readers new and substantive information about the case:

Since Miss Borden's death, I have been importuned from many sources to make public some of the photographs which I personally took and have privately shown, but which were not used at the trial [4 small photos were included], and also to point out the relevancy of certain facts which were then produced in evidence with relation to certain other facts which were never disclosed, in order that a better balanced criterion for public judgment might be furnished, even though thereby certain sensational features of the case might be mitigated and some of the mystery surrounding the case be removed.

But the "certain other facts which were never disclosed" except perhaps two of no persuasive import are not to be found.

CERTAIN RELEVANT FACTS

What are the two "new facts"? One is an account of how Mr. Adams purchased a new hatchet at a nearby hardware store "which seemed to be of correct size." He intended to exhibit this to the jury "and compare it with the notches as an illustration of his claim" that "the cutting must have been done by a weapon of very unusual make." But Governor Robinson persuaded him to test his theory first. As a result, they discovered that the hatchet of "usual make" he had purchased would indeed fit the wounds in the skulls, proving exactly the opposite of what Adams intended.

Phillips wrote, "this experience has never before been told."

The other item has to do with Jennings hiding in the downstairs front hall closet, while Phillips took a picture of the slightly open door, in which no hint of his employer is seen. But the fact that a murderer *could* have hidden there for 1½ to 2 hours between the two murders is not at all persuasive of the notion that a murderer *did*.

PHILLIPS' BIAS

Every author who has written about the Borden murders can be seen to have an underlying bias that unduly affects what "facts" they include and how they characterize or interpret those "facts." Arthur Phillips was a junior member of the defense team and seems never to have wavered in his belief that Lizzie was innocent. Virtually everyone who has written on this case has had a decided opinion about Lizzie's guilt or innocence, so Phillips does not differ from the rest in this regard. But some authors are much better able to hide or disguise their bias than was Phillips. He was not only biased in favor of Lizzie's innocence, but, sad to say, his grasp of the facts forty-two years later were at best tenuous and possibly "criminal." Let us consider the evidence.

SIXTEEN MATTERS OF EVIDENCE

One clear indication that an author's knowledge of his or her subject is sufficient is this: if basic facts that should not be in dispute are accurate. Sad to say, though Phillips would seem to have had more opportunity than most to get his facts right, there are several instances where they are not. Review with me the sixteen I found and see what you think.

1. He has Abby's age at death as sixty-five, when she was sixty-four. Andrew's age is given as seventy, when he was sixty-nine. Mr. Borden's connection with the Union Savings Bank is downgraded from president to "member of the investment committee." Interestingly, he tells us that Morse owned "some recently imported horses which were kept at a camp of itinerant horse traders in Westport." This may be true, but I have not read it elsewhere, and Phillips does not provide us with a source for this connection. If, overall, Phillips had managed to get all other facts right in his narrative, I for one would be inclined to readily accept Morse's connection with itinerant horse traders. But, considering Phillips' lack of dependability generally, I must remain skeptical.
2. He states as fact that "Mrs. Borden was called to the rear door by a boy who presented a note." Yet we have absolutely nothing in the way of evidence that "a boy" or "a note" ever existed. If a boy and note had been proven, this would have provided major support for the view that Lizzie was indeed innocent.
3. We are told unequivocally the "the same hatchet" was used for both murders, when in fact it is not known for certain that a hatchet was the murder weapon, nor do we have anything on which to base the conclusion that only *one* weapon was used for both murders.
4. He wrote, "There was evidence that Mr. Borden and Mr. Morse had a lengthy and very loud argument during the previous (Wednesday) evening." Yet no one testified to that effect -- not Lizzie, Bridget or Morse, the only people left alive who could have known this.
5. The \$6,000 (which today would have buying power of more than \$110,000) embezzled from Borden & Almy by Joseph

- Carpenter, Jr. is referred to by Phillips as "a few dollars."
6. We are told that Andrew and Lizzie were "descendants of ... Joseph Borden ... friend of the Indian Chieftain Philip." But tracing their ancestry back as far as the 1300s, not one person was named Joseph.
 7. Instead of arguing that Lizzie had never been in D. R. Smith's Pharmacy, as she herself contended, he writes, "She had sought to purchase it [the prussic acid] for an innocent purpose." Obviously his intent here is to argue once again for Lizzie's innocence, but by taking the position that she did indeed go to the pharmacy that day, he in fact lent support to one of the more damning pieces of evidence against her.
 8. At one point we are told that "... before her father came home. Lizzie passed downstairs from her second story room to the lower floor ...", presumably to be in agreement with Lizzie's testimony that she was downstairs when her father came in. But eight pages later, perhaps forgetting himself, he writes that Bridget "made a comment which caused Lizzie Borden, who was upstairs, to laugh ..." He also has it that the door to the spare room was "open," when Lizzie had testified to its being closed at that time.
 9. He has it that Professor Wood "examined ... all of Miss Borden's clothes." What a prodigious task that would have been! Instead of arguing that the dress Lizzie burned could not have been possible evidence of her complicity, he wrote, "... if any evidence was thus destroyed the police were admittedly inefficient."
 10. Nowhere else have I read that Lizzie Borden's mind might have "showed ... lack of balance in later years." Then why does Phillips suggest this when all it could do was hurt her case?
 11. In spite of several people having met Mr. Borden that morning, with even Mrs. Kelly seeing him just as he was trying to open the front door, Phillips writes, "... nor did anyone meet Mr. Borden while he was returning home a little before eleven o'clock."
 12. He writes that it was "superlatively hot" and "such a hot day" when we now know the temperature at about 11 a.m. that day was about 78°F with the high being about 80°F.
 13. To cover for two differing versions -- what Lizzie said about where she was while her father was being murdered, as well as what one other [Alice] remembered her to say, Phillips has it that "She had been into the barn loft to locate some fishing tackle or sinkers and to find some metal which would fasten a blind of the house."
 14. Hyman Lubinsky's testimony is changed from "saw a lady come out the way from the barn to the stairs from the back of the house" to "he saw Miss Borden go into the house from the direction of the barn." This change is significant because if he did not see her go into the house, it might have been Ellan Eagan, but if she actually went inside it was likely Lizzie.
 15. Writing about Officer Medley's investigation of the barn, which Medley claimed as proof that Lizzie had lied about going into the barn's upstairs, and the two teenagers known as "me and Brownie" who claimed they had been up there sometime before Medley could have, Phillips wrote that Edwin Porter's book, *The Fall River Tragedy*, "made no mention of Medley's testimony or of that of 'Me and Brownie'." But on pages 172 and 173 of Porter's book there is

extensive coverage of Medley's testimony on this subject, and on page 264 several lines are devoted to "me and Brownie." ³

16. Lizzie's assets at the time of the murder are supposed to have included "an interest in the old family homestead." Apparently Phillips did not know, or had forgotten, that Mr. Borden had bought back the "old family homestead" from Emma and Lizzie three weeks before the murders.

SUMMATION FOR THE JURY

From at least the year Phillips graduated from Williams College at the age of twenty-one, he was involved with bookkeeping (initially for the Washington Mills Co.), mathematics (which he taught), typing (one of his tasks for the law office of Morton and Jennings), and financial affairs (e.g., fifty-three years as counsel for Lafayette Co-operative Bank). He was also a serious historian. Normally, someone of such interests has a natural bent for getting the facts down, and getting them right. But careful analysis of both the 1934 newspaper article and the somewhat revised version which appeared in book form twelve years later strongly suggest that, at least where Lizzie was concerned, Phillips was both biased and insufficiently concerned with knowing or facing many of the actual facts of the case.

REFERENCES

- 1 Phillips, Arthur S. *The Borden Murder Mystery: In Defence of Lizzie Borden*, Portland, ME: King Philip Publishing Co., 1986.
- 2 Phillips, Arthur S. *Borden Murder Case Secrets Bared; Defense Attorney Breaks Silence*, New Bedford Evening Standard Times, May 13, 1934.
- 3 Porter, Edwin H., *The Fall River Tragedy: A History of the Borden Murders*, Fall River, MA: George R.H. Buffinton Publisher, J.D. Munroe Press, 1893.

LIZBITS

(Continued from Page 5)

Some of Lizzie's real estate transactions were conducted in Mr. Cook's name, possibly to avoid publicity. He is remembered in Emma's will with a sum of money for faithful services to herself and her father. Lizzie's will named him Executor of her estate and beneficiary of a larger sum of money as well as real estate properties. Mr. Cook retained his office in the *A.J. Borden Building* until the sisters died in 1927.

Room 4 was the headquarters of the *Women's Christian Temperance Union*. I have no doubt that Lizbeth was a member of this religious society as well as of the *Christian Science Institute* in the room across the hall.

John Brokbord maintained a music studio in Room 6.

Henry A Clark, a tailor, is listed at this address but no room is mentioned.

Thibodeau's Literary and Business College occupied the entire third floor. This institution was a fixture in Fall River for many years, and figures in many a resume of young people seeking employment among the businesses in town. It was established in 1890 in the *A.J. Borden Building*, and continued at the same location until about 1954.

In 1923 the sisters petitioned the Court to allow separation of their interests in the *A.J. Borden Building*. The suit granted, I believe that Emma sold her share shortly thereafter.

In Lizzie's will she left her portion of the *A.J. Borden Building* to be shared equally by Grace Hartley Howe and Helen Leighton. It is reported that Charles C. Cook, Executor, sold Lizzie's one half share in the building for \$135,000.00. Miss Leighton and Mrs. Cook contested the sale, however, the Lower and Appellate Courts decided in their favor.

WHY LIZZIE WILL FOREVER HAUNT

(Continued from Page 8)

There is a theory that Andrew Borden intended to transfer more property to Abby that morning and did not want his daughters to know about it. This theory holds that Abby made up the story of the note to explain her own absence from home to Lizzie.

Lizzie also told the people who saw her immediately after her father's body was discovered that she had missed his murder because she had been in the barn looking for iron to fasten a screen. At the inquest, she testified that her trip to the barn was for sinkers for her fishing lines.

At any rate, "I can't do anything in a minute" was said at the inquest. She was answering Prosecutor Hosea Knowlton's question about why, according to her testimony, it had taken her some twenty minutes to eat two or three pears in a barn loft while, supposedly unbeknownst to her, someone was hacking her father to death.

The time available for the murder of Andrew Borden was indeed brief and, by some accounts, simply too short for Lizzie to have possibly done the deed.

Andrew Borden is said to have left work at 10:30 AM. He arrived home at approximately 10:40 and went to the couch for a nap. He was seen by Bridget as well as Lizzie. Bridget later testified that she went upstairs to take a nap herself and, after she had been lying down for about three minutes, heard the clock strike 11:00. She further testified that Miss Lizzie called her downstairs some "ten or fifteen minutes after [she] had heard the clock strike eleven."⁶ On cross examination, she backed off a bit, saying she couldn't be certain of the number of minutes that passed before hearing the clock strike.

Another witness, Hyman Lubinsky, testified that he saw a woman, who was not Bridget, although he could not positively identify her as Lizzie, walking to the Borden house from the barn at 11:00.

Police reported receiving a telephone call notifying them of Mr. Borden's death at 11:15.

Moreover, they got that fateful call -- which did not come from the Borden house -- after several other events are known to have occurred. Lizzie called Bridget to come downstairs because "somebody" had killed her father. Acting on Lizzie's orders, Bridget walked across the street to summon Dr. Bowen but found he wasn't at home. She then went to get Lizzie's best friend, Alice Russell.

In the meantime, Adelaide Churchill saw Lizzie at the Borden back door and responded to the latter's plaintive plea, "Oh, Mrs. Churchill, do come over. Someone's killed Papa." Mrs. Churchill offered to find a doctor. Upon leaving, Mrs. Churchill crossed the street and spotted Thomas Bowles, an employee of hers and asked him to fetch a physician. John Cunningham was there and heard this conversation. He went to a nearby store and made the 11:15 phone call.

We should remember that some of these things were happening at the same time rather than in order. However, that still gives Lizzie about seven minutes or less to commit the crime and cover it up -- if Mr. Lubinsky's story of the woman coming from the barn is to be trusted.

Is it?

A witness was called to back Lubinsky up. He was Charles E. Gardner who "operated the stable on Second Street where Lubinsky's horses were kept."⁷ He testified that Lubinsky had "left his stable between five and ten minutes past eleven o'clock."⁸

However, Gardner was impeached on cross-examination, when he said that he "himself had passed the Borden house in his own team fifteen minutes after Lubinsky had left his stable" yet had "observed no activity."⁹ This was hardly credible since it would mean that Gardner had passed the Borden house at 11:30 when a crowd was gathering in front of the house.

Lubinsky's testimony was also refuted by a police officer who had taken down the former's story "as Lubinsky told it on 8 August. Lubinsky said at that time that when he saw the woman it was exactly 10:30 AM."¹⁰

Still, Hyman Lubinsky's recollection cannot be dismissed out of hand. As far as is known, he had no relationship with Lizzie Borden and no reason to lie on her behalf but a good reason, as everyone does, to avoid a perjury charge.

Bridget Sullivan's longer recollection of the timeline is irreconcilable with the police record of a 11:15 phone call. After all, if Lizzie called her down fifteen minutes after 11:00, and the police time is accurate, there was *no* time for any intervening events to occur! However, if it were ten minutes later that Lizzie gave the cry, a five-minute interval would be possible -- which would still give Lizzie almost no time to murder her father and get rid of the evidence.

Could Sullivan have been lying? If so, why? Was Lubinsky lying? Again, why? There is fertile ground here, as elsewhere in the Borden record, for conspiracy theorizing.

By any account, there was a very modest window of opportunity for Lizzie to kill her father. So why did witnesses not find her drenched in blood?

The movie of the week starring Elizabeth Montgomery had Lizzie committing the murders nude in order to explain her post-killing cleanliness. This scenario seems particularly improbable in the Victorian era when traipsing around one's own home naked might be more shocking than a double homicide! At any rate, the hypothesis of a nude Lizzie does not explain how she was able to wash all the blood off of herself and get back into the cumbersome clothing of the era in such a brief amount of time. Additionally, her hair was not wet (either with blood or the water that would have been needed to wash it out) or even disarranged.

Many people believe that the dress Lizzie burned days after the murders was stained by blood but that does not explain why no one saw blood on her so shortly after her father's killing. Nor does it account for the failure of the police to find a bloody dress when they examined each garment in her closet.

Furthermore, witnesses reported that she did not even have a hair out of place. How likely is this after swinging a hatchet some eleven times?

The disposal of the weapon is yet another puzzle casting doubt on Lizzie's guilt as sole killer. The infamous "handleless hatchet" was introduced at trial as the probable weapon but no one testified with certainty that it did the ghastly deeds. If it was

the weapon and Lizzie the only villain, then she had to race downstairs to the cellar and brake the handle, perhaps because it had bloodstains, put the broken handle into a fire, wash the hatchet, and finally cover it with ashes to simulate disuse, all within the space of a few minutes. This meant that she was working very, very quickly indeed.

These very real problems, with the hypothesis of Lizzie as sole murderer, will continue to be fertile ground for conjecture and theory about the "true villain(s)," or Lizzie's accomplice(s).

Because of the Borden case's symbolic value as a microcosm of its Victorian era, and because of the very real puzzles in the case, it will haunt us forever, regardless of how many times it is declared "solved" or "dead." After all, the old Borden home is no longer occupied by John R. McGinn, it is now the *Lizzie Borden Bed-and-Breakfast/Museum*. The home which she moved to after her acquittal and named *Maplecroft* is now described as a Lizzie Borden Museum and *Lizzie Borden: Hash & Rehash* is the title of a documentary about the case.

SOURCES

1. *Newsweek*, June 4, 1984, Gates, David, p. 12.
2. Spiering, Frank, *Lizzie*, Pinnacle Books, New York, NY, 1984, pp. 136-141.
3. *Ibid.*, p. 139.
4. *Ibid.*, p. 140.
5. Sullivan, Robert, *Goodbye Lizzie Borden*, The Stephen Greene Press, Brattleboro, Vermont, 1974, p. 216.
6. *Ibid.*, p. 85.
7. *Ibid.*, p. 130.
8. *Ibid.*
9. *Ibid.*
10. *Ibid.*, p. 164.

A VISIT TO 92 SECOND STREET ...

(Continued from Page 9)

Wanting to get a better sense of where Alice Russell had been living at the time of the murders, we walked north on Fourth to Borden. Nearly every building that was on Borden in 1892 is no longer there. Extending from Second Street to Fourth on the south side of Borden is a quite large building called Borden Place, which appears to be a home for elderly, low-income, disabled, etc. Whether or not this is the case, it is definitely residential and in very good repair.

At this point we realized we would not be able to get to Third from Borden. Since we wanted to take a look at the buildings "behind" (i.e., immediately to the east) of 92 Second Street, we retraced our steps, going south on Fourth, one block west on Spring, then north on Third. Third Street is now a dead-end, stopping when it reaches the backyard of Borden Place. Dr. Chagnon's home is no longer there, as it would have been located in what is now the Borden Place backyard. The quite large house directly behind 92 Second Street was not there in 1892, as that location was then an orchard. Of course, you probably all know that 92 Second Street no longer has a backyard of its own, that area being completely covered by the print shop building. Part of the south side of the Borden home can be seen as you pass through the door that was added between the house and the adjacent print shop, because there is a gap of about one or two feet between the two buildings, though no open sky can be seen



92 SECOND STREET

Part of the south side of the Borden home can be seen as you pass through the door ...

PHOTOGRAPH COURTESY OF JEANNINE H. BERTOLET

overhead!

There is one small out-building still on the Third street property that touches 92 Second Street at its southeast corner. This small building may have been the same one where a hatchet was found not long after the trial had ended. Though it seems quite possible with today's hindsight that this may well have been the murder weapon, I guess back then everyone was fed-up with the whole ordeal, and it isn't even known today whether that hatchet still exists, much less where it might be.

When we first began our little walk (which takes longer to write about than to do), we noticed *St. Mary's Catholic Church*, now designated a Cathedral, at the southwest corner of Second and Spring Streets. It occurred to my wife that Lizzie's interest in the Madonna is not unlikely to have been related to the fact that she lived in such close proximity to *St. Mary's*. As a protestant, with familial connections to the Baptists, Quakers, Universalists and Congregationalists, Catholic churches would have been taboo for Lizzie, likely increasing her interest. At any rate, Lizzie

brought back from Europe more than one print of Raphael's *Sistine Madonna*.

As we started back toward 92 Second Street from the church, we saw a lady unlocking the door to the print shop. Arriving at that entrance shortly after she'd gone in, I rang the bell a couple times and knocked on the door, but did not receive any response. This seems to occur rather often, based on a visit we paid there one and a half years ago. On that occasion I had to call them using my cell phone before I could get anyone to answer the door! Considering how uniformly gracious they all have been once we've made contact, I can only assume that sound does not carry all that well inside these buildings.

I tried opening the door myself, and as I did the same lady we'd seen shortly before appeared on the other side; she'd heard us after all! Soon enough we were able to enter 92 Second Street and were shown to our room of one night, what the Bordens referred to as the spare room or guest room (they used both terms) and what I fondly think of as Abby's death room.

Naturally, it had already been predetermined on which side of the bed each of us would sleep - me next to Abby, Simone safely on the other side. We settled in, then went down to the parlor. There we were able to watch four or five brief videos, all but one of which I had not seen before, most of them being fairly recent. By then it was about 5:00 pm. We had reservations for six at the *Abbey Grille*, and since we wanted to do more exploring before dinner, we left immediately.

For us at least, it was surprising how close 92 Second Street is to the very center of downtown. Walking south to Spring, west one block to South Main, then north, it is one fairly long block before you get to the A.J. Borden building. No longer is there any lettering visible from the outside to reveal its (apparently former) name. With all new windows, the building hardly even looks to be of 19th century vintage. But certain architectural features still present provided us with the assurance of it not being a similar and entirely other, latter-day replacement. One thing I had not realized is that the shape of the building is not 90 degrees at the corner of Annawan and South Main, but rather follows the contour of the two streets, which angle in to each other at something like 100 degrees, or even somewhat more. Whatever the present use of the building, there is no signage whatsoever to be seen from the outside. Perhaps if we'd walked into the lobby, assuming we could, the answer to this unasked question might have been readily forthcoming. But, our interest being rather minimal on that particular point, we continued north.

I had thought I might be able to step into the downtown branch of the *Fall River Public Library* which is now temporarily situated next door to the impressive structure, built in Lizzie's day, due to extensive renovations now in progress. I had wanted to check on a couple items, but alas, they close at 5:00 on Fridays, and it was now about 5:15. We decided to continue walking north on what had become North Main when it crossed Bedford. This intersection, formerly known as Main and Central, was even earlier referred to simply as the Four Corners, being the epicenter of what was once upon a time called the village of Troy.

We meandered our way toward Lizzie's home on French Street. She named it *Maplecroft* sometime after 1912, a good seven years after Emma moved out, and two decades after they had both moved in. We zig-zagged first east, then north, then east again. On the way we saw the *Central Congregational Church* as it could be viewed through yards on its north and east sides. We

walked by the very imposing (former) *B.M.C. Durfee High School*, now a court house, and happened to be on Rock Street as we passed the *Fall River Historical Society's* fine home. Both on the way to *Maplecroft* and on the way back, we saw many homes much more sumptuous or stately than that of Lizzie and Emma (we also saw more than a few that were much less so). *Maplecroft* is far from being a "mansion," though it is quite spacious for two spinster sisters, and very comfortable. But the \$11,000 it cost them in 1893 would only buy a home today costing about \$220,000. Goodness!! She had to pay ex-governor Robinson \$25,000 for his part in getting her off; that would be worth about half a million today!! Considering how much money they had then, I would say she and Emma were quite frugal in choosing their new home!

As anyone who has seen *Maplecroft* any time during the last few years knows, the place needs a fresh paint job. For me, not yet having been inside, my interest was focused on how *Maplecroft* is situated vis-à-vis the house next door on the northeast corner of French and Belmont (which becomes High if you cross south of French). Because I researched and wrote an article (available at www.lizzieandrewborden.com), about the Swifts -- Lizzie's next door neighbors for 24 years, I'd like to see the interior of the Swifts' home nearly as much as the inside of *Maplecroft* (well, truth to tell, it's probably 30-70 in favor of *Maplecroft*).

We were both impressed with the fine views to be had from nearly any vantage point on the streets near *Maplecroft*. Not only can the Taunton River be seen to the west, but looking up Belmont it can also be clearly seen as it appears a few miles further north.

It was now time for dinner. I hadn't realized that the *Central Congregational Church* is no longer used as a church! Of course, I hadn't really thought much about it one way or another. However, if you stop and consider, it has probably been a good many years since the church had enough members to maintain the upkeep of the place. What's more, since everyone drives today, there wouldn't be anything even close to adequate parking for a congregation large enough to provide for its upkeep. Thankfully, the *International Institute of Culinary Arts* has taken it over, with the main building being now called "The Great Hall" and used for banquets and weddings.

The parish house next door (think activities or recreation center) is now the *Abbey Grille*. Somehow I feel certain that Lizzie's fellow churchgoers in the 19th century would be shocked to see a bar and restaurant, no matter how fine, being so industriously operated inside their church's building. After all, even if every one of them drank alcoholic beverages, I'm sure they believed it should be done quite separately from their public persona's involvement with church!

The service and food were both superb. For two mixed drinks, two glasses of the house cabernet, one spinach salad, roasted cod (one entree shared between us), two cups of excellent clam chowder and one key lime pie, the total cost, with tip, was \$67.00.

Did you ever wonder where Heaven is? We now know it's in Fall River! On our way back toward 92 Second, we happened onto a store that specializes in things "spiritual" if they be of an earthy, Celtic, mystical or "purple" bent. Its name is "Heaven", and you can even buy a t-shirt that says "Heaven, Fall River, MA." We enjoyed browsing, but didn't buy a thing.

Back at the murder house, we'd been told (perhaps like Bridget or Lizzie had told Andrew) that the back door (actually the north side door) would be left open. But, sure enough, it was locked! However, a short knock and Eleanor, the night manager, quickly opened it for us. By now it was about 7:30. We were in time for a tour of the house, starting at 8:00, with refreshments afterward. The tour was a delight, covering not only the two floors but also the basement.

Would you believe? As we went down the steps to "the cellar" (as they more often say around here) I missed a step (was I pushed by an unseen hand?), lost my balance and bruised the little finger on my right hand against the rough wall. One place in the cellar in particular gave me the chills . . . the southwest corner "Wood Room." For whatever reason, no one, including Eleanor, could find switches that would turn on any lights other than one bulb toward the stairs, which are located at the opposite end from the chilling Wood Room. But I ventured to its entrance anyway. Needless to say, with those chills permeating my body, I decided not to go beyond its threshold.

After some excellent refreshments (cheese, crackers, pastries, coffee and soft drinks), my wife and I headed up to our bedroom. By about 10:15 we were settled in for the night. Both of us slept a bit fitfully, but got a decent night's rest. On the few occasions I got up through the night, I made sure to apologize to Abby each time as I stepped where her body had been found. Up by 6:15 or so, Simone slept another hour or a little more. In spite of Eleanor's many stories about various encounters both employees and guests have had with ghosts, no one who slept in the house that night experienced anything in the least other-worldly. Even two young women who stayed up until about midnight trying to conjure spirits using the Ouija board (available from the sitting room) failed to receive any intelligible communications from the beyond.

In the morning, before anyone other than the cook (Dave Quigley, George's brother) was up, I was able to sit in the parlor for about 45 minutes, writing in "Lizzie's" diary (whatever my imagination suggested to me that Lizzie might have written under similar circumstances). The first entry I wrote was for February 23, 1892, a little less than half a year before the murders. My second entry was August 23, 1893, about two months after the acquittal, but a few weeks prior to their move to French Street. As with each of the other times I've allowed myself to be a conduit for what I can hope are Lizzie's thoughts, what made it into the diary was revealing, especially what came to me about her attitudes, priorities, beliefs and relationships. It gives me a bit more confidence that I may actually get my book written!

Breakfast, for me, was somewhat disappointing. Oh, everything was superb and there was much more available to eat than anyone could. But there was no mutton broth!! However, Eleanor did say they will pass along my suggestion that they could at least serve fresh mutton broth as part of the breakfast. I suspect most of us would enjoy eating a truly authentic recreation of what the Bordens typically ate. But there were johnnycakes, pears, bananas, cookies (shaped like hatchets) and coffee (items known to have been on the table the morning of August 4th). However, most of us had more juice, assorted fruit, fresh-baked cakebread, scrambled eggs and ham than we did the "authentic" foodstuff.

There are many photos to be seen throughout the house, some of which I have not found in any of the many books about the

case. One was of Abby's father's second wife (i.e., her stepmother), who was only one year and two months older than Abby. I had harbored the naive notion that when Abby's father had married the second time -- to a woman 25 years younger than himself -- he had naturally married a "babe." But, unfortunately for everyone involved, Jane E.D. Baker Gray was perhaps the ugliest (from my perspective, at least) of all the women connected with this case. Hey, maybe she just took a bad picture!

After breakfast was over, I walked about, taking photos of photos. Then we packed up and said our goodbyes. It being shortly after nine, we drove up to the library. In about half an hour's time, I acquired a Xerox copy of Arthur Phillips' "In Defence of Lizzie Borden" as it appears in the third fascicle of his *History of Fall River*. I also perused microfilm copies of the two newspapers that were being published in Fall River at the time of Lizzie's birth. But as I thought would be the case, neither of these newspapers was in the habit of including any information whatsoever about births -- marriages and deaths, but no births.

By 10:15 we were back home, looking through the previous day's mail, reading the morning newspaper and checking our phone messages and e-mail.

I hope you have enjoyed this vicarious visit to 92 Second Street as much as we did.

... JOHN VINNICUM MORSE ...

(Continued from Page 17)

A. Well, in the different rooms. There is a wash room and a coal room and a wood room.

Q. I understand, or I would not ask it, that you were there when they were downstairs in the cellar?

A. I was down there part of the time, not all the time; just a short time.

Q. Well, when you were there, what did they look into; what did they do?

A. Well, they merely looked over the different rooms.

Q. Did they find anything down there?

A. Except some axes--hatchets.

Q. Did you see them find those--see them have them?

A. I see them have them.

Q. How many officers were there?

A. I don't know: there were three or four, I think, down there.

Q. Would you know those axes if you were to see them?

A. I would not.


Q. Could you give us anything as to whether they were axes or hatchets?

A. I think they were mostly hatchets. I think there was one, what I call an axe.

(Editor's note: Unfortunately, there is not enough space to print the few lines remaining in Mr. Morse's testimony. Since the entire trial is now available on the Internet at Dr. Stefani Koorey's magnificent website, www.lizzieandrewborden.com, we shall end this series when most subscribers have Internet access.

Mr. Morse's testimony will conclude in the next issue and we shall begin another. If any of you have recommendations, please drop me a line ...)

LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY



Volume I, Number 1 ---- Not Available
 Volume I, Number 2 ---- Not Available
 Volume I, Number 3 ---- \$ 15.00
 Volume I, Number 4 ---- \$ 10.00
 Remaining Back Issues - \$ 8.00

BACK ISSUES

LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY

Bristol Community College
 777 Elsbree Street
 Fall River, MA 02720-7391

Non-Profit
 Organization
 U.S. Postage
PAID
 Fall River, MA
 Permit No. 140

Make check or money order payable to the

LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY

For new subscribers either remove the
 label and write your name and address or
 just write to us with the same information.
 Please include your check or money order.

Mail to:

LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY

Dr. Gabriela Schalow Adler - Publisher
 Bristol Community College
 777 Elsbree Street
 Fall River MA 02720-7391

If your label says - **Remaining Issues: 0** - Renew your subscription now!

✂ Cut-out or duplicate coupon and mail today! ☒ Your Choice!

U.S.A. →	1 Year \$18.00 <input type="checkbox"/>	2-Years \$ 30.00 <input type="checkbox"/>
Non U.S.A. →	1 Year \$24.00 <input type="checkbox"/>	2 Years \$ 40.00 <input type="checkbox"/>

Affix mailing label here.



THE LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY

Volume IX, Number 3

\$6.00

July, 2002

THE FIRST POLICE INVESTIGATOR!

PATRICK H. DOHERTY

By Beau Doherty

With contributions by:
Patricia Doherty Foley and
Stefani Koorey

(Editor's note: The three photographs of Captain Patrick H. Doherty in this issue are enjoying their print debut. Two of the three can also be seen on Dr. Stefani Koorey's amazing website, LizzieAndrewBorden.com. The remaining photograph has hitherto only been viewed by family and friends.

It was through the good graces of Dr. Koorey that we discovered this treasure trove. It was she who first made contact with Mr. Beau Doherty, author of this article and shared her good fortune with us! Thank you very much Dr. Koorey.

Mr. Beau Doherty was kind enough to entrust his valuable photographs to us via the United States mail, else they would probably have been lost to the ages We especially thank Mr. Doherty for his generous gift to us ... and to the future.

Through the miracle of email, Captain Patrick H. Doherty's only grandchild, Patricia Doherty Foley, made a significant contribution to this article. We welcome her presence and thank her very much also.

Supplemental articles in this issue include the complete trial testimony of Captain Doherty and a transcription of his obituary.)



PATRICK H. DOHERTY
AUGUST 10, 1859 - JUNE 28, 1915
IN HIS CAPTAIN'S UNIFORM ON THE
FALL RIVER POLICE DEPARTMENT

— FIRST TIME PRINTING RIGHTS GRANTED TO THE LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY —

PHOTOGRAPH REPRODUCED COURTESY OF THE BEAU DOHERTY FAMILY
©2002 ROBERT EDWARD DOHERTY, JR.

GOVERNMENT DOCUMENTS
COLLECTION

DEC 06 2002

University of Massachusetts
Depository Copy

All those interested in the Lizzie Borden controversy may well recall the details of that fateful day, August 4, 1892, when Miss Lizzie Borden's father and step-mother were brutally murdered at the hands of an assailant, unknown even until this very day! It is also certain that you will remember Special Officer Patrick H. Doherty. It was he who took the lead during the early Borden hatchet-murders investigation. Well, my name is Beau Doherty and I am a descendent of Special Officer, later Captain, Patrick H. Doherty.

PATRICK'S PARENTS

Patrick H. Doherty's parents were John Doherty and Mary Walsh Doherty, both born in Ireland. John was born May 1, 1815 in Limerick, Ireland, the year Napoleon was defeated at Waterloo. He died March 9, 1886 in Fall River, Massachusetts. Mary Doherty was born in Tipperary, Ireland and died March 10, 1904 in Fall River, Massachusetts. John Doherty came to America from Halifax, Nova Scotia on a ship called the Acadian. He arrived in Boston on November 29, 1841. John and Mary married in Boston on November 16, 1850.

(Continued on Page 12)

THE LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY

A Different Menu:

On The Table This Issue:

Patrick H. Doherty Page 1.
By Beau Doherty

With Contributions by Patricia Doherty Foley and Stefani Koorey

American Murder Ballads - Friends and Relations Page 3.
Submitted by Jack Wayne Fleming

Patrick H. Doherty - The Trial Testimony Page 6.

Patrick H. Doherty - The Obituary Page 7.

Patrick H. Doherty - The Witness Statements Page 8.

The Room That Lizzie Built Page 9.
By Jane Rimer

The Trial Testimony of Mr. John Vinnicum Morse - Conclusion Page 10.
Permission Granted by the Massachusetts Superior Court

The Broken Branch Page 22.

Terence Duniho, November 13, 1940 - Saturday, April 6, 2002



Standard Fare:

BIBLIOGRAPHIC BORDEN Page 4.
by Lisa Zawadzki

LIZBITS Page 5.
by Neilson Caplain

PRINCESS MAPLECROFT Page 2.
by Mary T. Cusack

PRINCESS MAPLECROFT



©2002 Mary T. Cusack

THE LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY

Volume IX, Number 3, July, 2002

Publisher Gabriela Schalow Adler
Editor Maynard F. Bertolet
Copy Editor Jeannine H. Bertolet
Business Manager Roberta Gonneville
Photographer Jeannine H. Bertolet

Staff Contributors:
Neilson Caplain
Mary T. Cusack
Lisa Zawadzki

Current Issue Contributors:
Maynard F. Bertolet
Beau Doherty
Jack Wayne Fleming
Patricia Doherty Foley
Stefani Koorey
Jane Rimer

Printing and Mailing:
TCI Press
21 Industrial Court
Seekonk, MA 02771-2016

The *Lizzie Borden Quarterly* is published four times a year on January 15, April 15, July 15 and October 15. Distribution is by U.S. mail. Current one-year USA mail subscriptions cost \$18.00 for one year and \$30.00 for two years. Non-USA subscriptions are \$24.00 for one year and \$40.00 for two years. The Editor reserves the right to edit and/or revise submissions, without changing intent. If possible, please submit articles on floppy disks in any PC format. To be considered, submissions must be received 60 days prior to the publication date and include the author's name, address and telephone number. Advertising rates are \$50.00 for a quarter-page, \$100.00 for a half-page and \$200.00 for a full-page.

Send all subscription payments to:
Lizzie Borden Quarterly
Dr. Gabriela Schalow Adler - Publisher
Bristol Community College
777 Elsbree Street
Fall River, MA 02720-7391

Send all *LBQ* submissions,
letters to the editor and
address changes to:
Lizzie Borden Quarterly
Mr. Maynard F. Bertolet - Editor
2 Blancyd Road
Merion Station, PA 19066-1802
Telephone and Fax Numbers: (610) 664-2247
E-Mail: Bertolet@msn.com

Lizzie Borden Quarterly
(ISSN 1069-4900)
©2002 Bristol Community College
All rights reserved.
Unauthorized duplication prohibited by law.

MISS LIZBETH BORDEN'S EDITOR SPEAKS

The current issue was shaped by two cataclysmic events. The first was the tragic, unexpected loss of Terence Duniho to our world.

Terence was well known to readers of the *Lizzie Borden Quarterly*, and even better known to those of us who use the Internet. He frequently joined in Internet discussions about the Borden case and was well respected for his knowledge and intelligence.

In just the last issue, April, 2002, Terence had two articles published, as well as others in prior issues. His work about the Lizzie Borden Inquest testimony, co-authored by Dr. Koorey, and published in the October, 2001 *Lizzie Borden Quarterly*, will long be remembered. Please see his obituary beginning on page 22.

The other newsworthy event was the first release of three photographs of Patrick H. Doherty by the Doherty family. Special Officer Doherty, later Captain, was the initial official police investigator at the scene of the Borden murders. These photographs have never appeared previously in print, however, two of them may also be viewed at Dr. Stefani Koorey's amazing website, *LizzieAndrewBorden.com*.

The photographs are currently owned by the great grand nephew of Captain Doherty, Beau Doherty. Mr. Beau Doherty entrusted his treasured photographs to us to convert them into a digital format for printing. Thank you very much Mr. Doherty!

As a consequence of these two events, the *Lizzie Borden Quarterly* sadly and gratefully dedicates this issue to the memory of Mr. Terence Duniho and Captain Patrick H. Doherty.

I must tell you just a bit about the next issue. Two of the most respected and revered members of the Lizzie Borden community are Neilson Caplain and Leonard Rebello. I refer to them as the Dean and the Doctor, and affix both titles on either or both. Well, they have combined forces to research and document an article about Mr. Joseph Carpenter, talked about in William L. Masterton's masterful book, *Lizzie Didn't Do It*. This will be another first and not to be missed!

On our back page, both in the last issue and the current issue, we have listed the price structure for available back issues of the *Lizzie Borden Quarterly*. I must hasten to tell you that, as of this writing, there are only a few issues left of Volume I, issues 3 and 4. Actually, they are both in the low single digits, consequently, if you desire copies, now would be the time to buy!

Once again, please check your address label. If you see **Remaining Issues: 0**, renew your subscription as soon as possible. This will eliminate the need for us to send you a reminder notice, and save us some money besides!

Maynard F. Bertolet

AMERICAN MURDER BALLADS - FRIENDS AND RELATIONS

(Editor's note: The following snippet from "American Murder Ballads And Their Stories", collected and edited by Olive Woolley Burt, Oxford University Press, 1958, was sent in by LBQ subscriber Jack Wayne Fleming for your pleasure ... enjoy!)

Edmund Pearson's masterly study of the Borden murder, *The Trial Of Lizzie Borden*, leaves nothing to be desired. Yet the author required a thick volume of 433 pages to relate what is told so succinctly in one of the most popular murder jingles:

*Lizzie Borden took an axe
And gave her mother forty whacks;
When she saw what she had done
She gave her father forty-one.*

The problem of how Lizzie could commit the murders and escape without being spattered with blood is neatly solved in the quatrain some believe to be the original jingle:

*Lizzie Borden took an axe
And gave her mother forty whacks.
Then she stood behind the door
And gave her father forty more.*

Another popular version found in many parts of the country goes:

*Andrew Borden, he is dead;
Lizzie hit him on the head.
Lizzie killed her mother, too
What a horrid thing for Liz to do!*

When I was teaching elementary school in Embreeville, Pennsylvania, in 1923, I heard the children chant this counting-out rhyme:

*Lizzie Borden, bend your head;
Don't you wish that you were dead?
Lizzie Borden, bend your knee;
One, two, three-out goes she!*

Then there is the contemporaneous quip: 'A neighbor met Lizzie on the morning of August 4th, 1892, and asked her what time it was. "I don't know," Lizzie replied, "I'll go axe father."'

Surprisingly, the Borden murders seem to have inspired none of the usual ballads. There is, however, a poem to Lizzie, composed by A. L. Bixby, said to have been one of the reporters covering the trial. The verses were widely circulated at that time.

*There's no evidence of guilt, Lizzie Borden,
That should make your spirit wilt, Lizzie Borden.
Many do not think that you
Chopped your father's head in two,
It's so hard a thing to do,
Lizzie Borden.*

*You have borne up under all,
Lizzie Borden.
With a mighty show of gall,
Lizzie Borden.
But because your nerve is stout
Does not prove beyond a doubt
That you knocked the old folks out,
Lizzie Borden.*

THE BIBLIOGRAPHIC BORDEN

By Lisa Zawadzki

Hello again, loyal readers. First of all I would like to thank Mr. Bertolet for the kind words that preceeded my column in the last issue. It has been both a pleasure and an honor to write for the *Lizzie Borden Quarterly* these many years. It doesn't seem possible that the *LBQ* will soon be celebrating its tenth anniversary. That said, I have some nice reading material for us all to enjoy.

Marshall, John David
Lizzie Borden and the Library Connection
Tallahassee, FL:
School of Library & Information Studies,
Florida State University, 1990

When I was looking for material for this quarter's column, I came across this wonderful booklet. Surely, I said to myself, I must have already used this; it has always been such a favorite. But, checking my notes, I realized that I had not. Well, such a crime has to be corrected immediately.

This superb bibliographic essay explored all the major works on the case and a great many of the lesser-known ones. Dr. Marshall also explained the connections between the case and the great profession of librarianship. Being a reference librarian myself, it is always good to see one's vocation portrayed so well.

There are, of course, the many books on the Borden murders, which are contained in libraries. Miss Helen Leighton, a librarian in Fall River, was a good friend of Lizzie's. Also, the prolific writer Edmund Lester Pearson was a librarian of no small standing. I shall not tell you the other librarian connections, so as not to spoil everything for the reader.

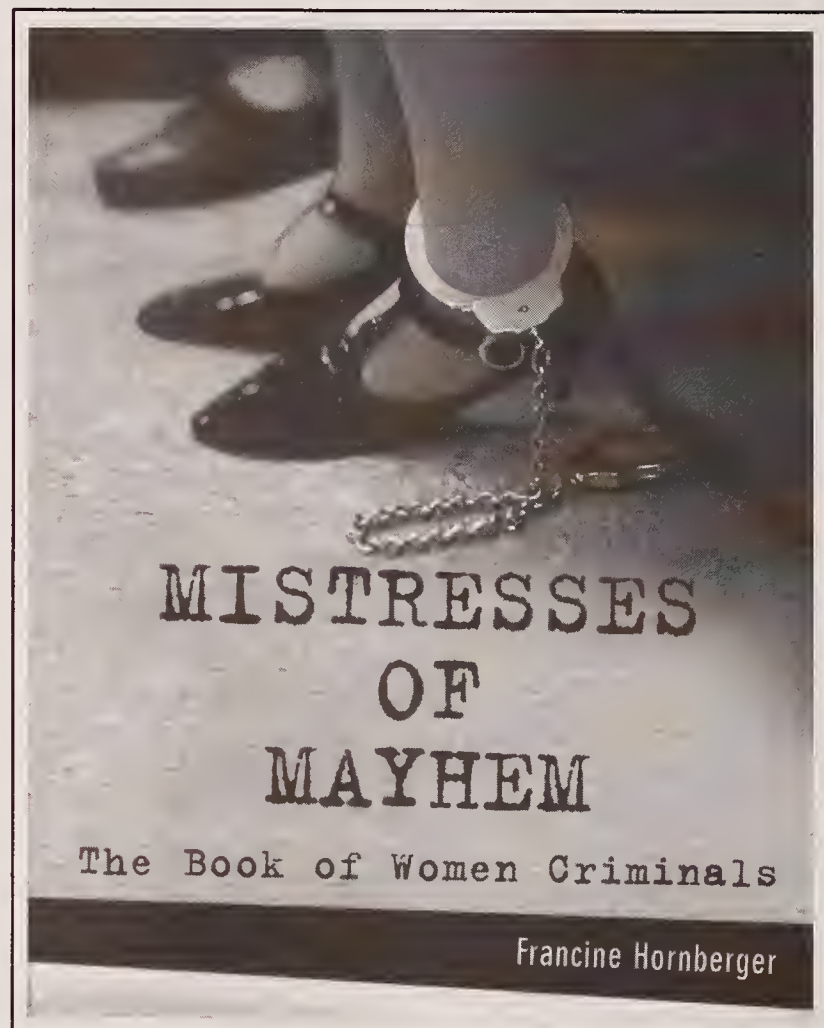
An outstanding bibliography ended this work. The familiar photograph of Miss Lizzie standing behind a chair was nicely reproduced opposite the title page. This item is well worth the time to seek out; I'm sure you will think as highly of it as I do.

Hornberger, Francine
Elizabeth 'Lizzie' Borden
In "Mistresses of Mayhem: The Book of Women Criminals"
[New York?]: Alpha Books, 2002: 35-38

Just reading the above article title, you know we are going to have trouble. This piece had more mistakes than you could shake an axe at. First of all, Hornberger kept citing "Elizabeth" as Lizzie's proper given name. While discussing Lizzie's childhood, the author recounted the one time young Miss Borden revealed her dark side. With certainty we are told that Lizzie decapitated Abby's pet cat. It was, however, felt to be a symbolic attack on her stepmother, since Lizzie's love of animals is so well known.

The author then went on to give a summary of the crime, trial, and Lizzie's later life. To be fair, this portion of the article was largely accurate. The book as a whole also looked interesting, articles all profiling famous woman criminals. But considering the errors in the Borden piece, it made me wonder about the quality of the rest of the book.

Engel, Howard
Lizzie Borden
In "Crimes of Passion: An Unblinking Look At Murderous



Love"
Buffalo, NY : Firefly Books, 2001: 193-194

Included in a chapter with the swell title of *Families, I Hate You*, Miss Borden has made yet another foray into the British true-crime anthology. Citing Lizzie's miserable life within her cheapskate father's house, Engel theorized that she might have done away with her parents just for a shot at freedom. This brief couple of paragraphs did not try to retell the crimes; it was merely a quick exploration of why someone may have killed their parents.

Hirsch, E.D.
Lizzie Borden
In "The Dictionary of Cultural Literacy "
Boston : Houghton Mifflin Company, 1988: 260

I found this three-line entry within this reference book of information that "every American needs to know." It merely mentioned she was accused of killing father and stepmother, was found not guilty, and that the crime was never solved. I just thought Lizzie's presence in this book was very intriguing. Now when people accuse you of being overly interested in a gory axe murder, you can glibly reply that you are not. You are simply culturally literate!

In the last issue I mentioned that a new edition of Richard Glyn Jones's *The Mammoth Book of Killer Women* has come out. I did get to examine the book, and it does contain the same Dorothy Dunbar essay *Far From the Old Folks at Home*.

That's all for now. I'll see you in the next issue.

By Neilson Caplain

(Editor's note: We regret to inform our readers that Mr. Terence Duniho, to whom Mr. Caplain gives credit in his current report, passed away since his final two articles appeared in the last issue. Please see his obituary beginning on page 23.

Even though Mr. Duniho did not live to see his final two articles in print, we do believe that he would have been pleased to note his inspiration lives on ... through this article, and I believe, many more to follow.)

ARTHUR SHERMAN PHILLIPS

Terence Duniho's excellent article in the *Lizzie Borden Quarterly*, (Volume IX, No.2), about Arthur Sherman Phillips reminded me of a book I had once read written by that individual. Searching in my library there it was, "My Wilderness Friends," a small hard-cover book privately printed in 1910 by the Munroe Press in Fall River. It relates Mr. Phillips' fishing and hunting trips in Canada.

From a map in the book I located the area of his adventures in the eastern part of Quebec, in the lake and river country, many miles north of the state of Maine.

By "wilderness friends" the author must have meant the two-footed variety, because he seemed to have no compunction of visiting mayhem on game and fish in the area. For example, he tells of several occasions about reeling in some forty trout, far more than could have been eaten by himself and his companions. He hunted deer for their antlers, killed a yearling bear with an axe to the head, and a female deer from a family of three. I suppose the mores of that day are different than those we experience today, and that hunting and fishing purely for sport was considered eminently acceptable.

On the other hand Mr. Phillips fondly described the various guides he employed: Menuck the Acadian, Joe the half-breed, Pete and Tom, who was the most sought after and best-paid guide of them all. Finally, there was Noel the Indian. Indeed, the book ends with a tribute to Noel, describing him as "honest, temperate, staunch and true."

Mr. Phillips was well into his forties at the time of those forays. For a dignified portly gentlemen, it is difficult to envision him enduring the rigors of the sport. There were cold rainy days, storms, risk of attack by wild animals, and not mentioned were the little biting black bugs that I know from my own torturous experience. Perhaps it was because, in his own words, that he "was endowed with the Yankee love of danger."

From photographs at the *Fall River Historical Society*, Assistant Curator Dennis Binnette describes Arthur Sherman Phillips as "a well dressed, astute gentleman. Short in stature and somewhat portly, he was a traditionalist of sorts as is evidenced by his hair style. (Hair parted in the middle, a popular style in the 1890's, which he continued to sport fifty years later.) Fond of games of chance and skill, his intelligence and wit are obvious when looking at his face, with expressive eyes, an almost pouting mouth surmounted by a well trimmed moustache and full round jowls. Marie Claire Lajoie, archivist at the *Fall River Historical Society*, recalls that her father, the late Hon. J. Edward Lajoie, always remembered Phillips in glowing terms. Having worked with Phillips as a young lawyer, Atty. Lajoie always spoke of him



ARTHUR SHERMAN PHILLIPS

REPRODUCED FROM:

PHILLIPS, ARTHUR. *THE PHILLIPS HISTORY OF FALL RIVER.*

Fascicle I:

Dover Press, Printed Privately (1944)

PHOTOGRAPH COURTESY OF THE LEONARD REBELLO COLLECTION

with 'respect and admiration.' "

Incidentally, in the firm of Morton and Jennings where Phillips worked as a young apprentice, his mentor was James Madison Morton, Jr. who later became a Judge in the the Supreme Court of Massachusetts.

There is another broad dimension to Mr. Phillips' accomplishments. He was a sophisticated historian. In addition to his respected three-volume set, *The History of Fall River*, a report in the *Herald News*, under date of Thursday, April 26, 1928, reveals that Phillips gave a talk before the *Fall River Historical Society* entitled "Colonial Settlements 1602 - 1690." During this lecture, based on research that occupied more than a year of his spare time, many facts never before published were brought to light.

PATRICK H. DOHERTY - THE TRIAL TESTIMONY

PERMISSION TO TRANSCRIBE OFFICIAL BORDEN TRIAL TRANSCRIPT EXCERPTS WAS GRANTED TO THE LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY ON FEBRUARY 11, 2000
PERMISSION WAS GRANTED BY THE OFFICE OF JUDGE SUSAN DEL VECCHIO, CHIEF JUSTICE OF THE MASSACHUSETTS SUPERIOR COURT

(Continuing with our Patrick H. Doherty memorial, we are pleased to bring you his entire trial testimony. It took place on the fifth day of the trial, Friday, June 9, 1893 and begins on page 588 of the original trial transcript.

We gratefully acknowledge the talents and efforts of Mr. Harry Widdows from Spartanburg, South Carolina for the conversion of the original trial transcript into digital text, which enables us to bring it to you.)

PATRICK H. DOHERTY, Sworn

Q. (By Mr. Moody.) Patrick H. Doherty?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. You are a member of the police force at Fall River?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And have been so for how long?

A. A little over seven years.

Q. What is your present position upon the force?

A. Captain.

Q. In August of last year what was your position?

A. Special officer.

Q. Detailed for special work?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. What sometimes is called inspector?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And you had no regular patrol duty to do at that time?

A. No, sir.

Q. Where were you on August 4th last when you first obtained knowledge of the homicide?

A. In the station house.

Q. From whom did you receive your information?

A. From City Marshal Hilliard.

Q. That was the central police station, I suppose you mean?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Had you been sent for or were you there?

A. I was there.

Q. Before or after Mr. Allen had first gone?

A. After Mr. Allen.

Q. Do you know the time when the marshal made any communication to you with reference to Second street? Did you observe the time?

A. I observed the time about seven or eight minutes before he spoke to me.

Q. When had you last observed the time before the talk with the marshal?

A. 11:25.

Q. Where were you then and what did you look at?

A. I was on the corner of Bedford and Second street, City Hall clock.



PATRICK H. DOHERTY
AUGUST 10, 1859 - JUNE 28, 1915

-- FIRST TIME PRINTING RIGHTS GRANTED TO THE LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY --

PHOTOGRAPH REPRODUCED COURTESY OF THE BEAU DOHERTY FAMILY
©2002 ROBERT EDWARD DOHERTY, JR.

Q. And from Bedford and Second streets where did you go?

A. To the station.

Q. About how far is it from the place where you saw the clock to the station?

A. Oh, it is not a hundred feet.

Q. Did you receive this communication as soon as you got to the station or after you had been there?

A. I had been there two or three minutes.

Q. After you had the talk with the marshal, what did you do?

A. I started for 92 Second street.

Q. What rate of speed?

A. Well, I walked at a rapid gait until I got to the post office, and then I ran.

Q. Was any one with you?

A. Not at that time, no, sir.

Q. Did you overtake any one of any consequence in this case on the way up?

A. I did, yes, sir.

(Continued on Page 13)

PATRICK H. DOHERTY - THE OBITUARY

(Editor's note: Unfortunately, we are unable to ascertain which newspaper printed this obituary of Captain Doherty. Mr. Beau Doherty explained that it was in a scrapbook, as pictured, owned and maintained by his Great Aunts Mary (Mame), Annie, Katherine H. (Kit) and Grace Doherty, without additional documentation. From the text it can be determined that it was printed on Patrick H. Doherty's deathday, June 28, 1915. I wonder what other nuggets might have been in that scrapbook!)

CAPT. P. H. DOHERTY ANSWERS TO THE FINAL ROLL CALL

Popular, Efficient and Respected Police Official After 30 Years of Honorable Service Goes to His Reward.

Capt. Patrick H. Doherty of the Northern Police station, one of the ablest members of the force and a most popular official, died at 6:30 this morning at his home, 1007 Rock street, after an extended illness. No death in the department in years has drawn such expression of regret and sympathy and the loss is not confined to that branch alone, for the city loses one of its prominent and highly respected citizens, who rejoiced in its advancement and lauded its achievements wherever he went.

Deceased was born Aug. 9, 1859 at Peoria, Ill. While he was still of tender years the family removed to Wareham, Mass., and lived there for a period of years, thence removing to this city. Prior to joining the police force Capt. Doherty was employed for a time by the Fall River Line company,

His appointment to the police force dated from Dec. 30, 1885, his death terminating his connection with the department when he was within easy reach of a record of 30 years continuous service. When the big shakeup and reorganization of the force was made by Former Mayor Dr. John W. Coughlin, on Feb. 10, 1893, Patrolman Doherty was made a captain and assigned to command of Div. 2 the Northern station. He remained at that post until June 1, 1899, when another shift of captains found him detailed to the Southern station.

The same traits of character which distinguished his service in the northern section of the city, made him equally popular among his new found acquaintances in all walks of life, at the south end of the city. On Feb. 24th, 1905 he was transferred to the Eastern station and remained under that assignment until June 24, 1906, when he was transferred to his original post at the Northern station. This order remained in effect until Nov. 8, 1909 when Capt. Doherty was sent to the Central station, thus completing the circuit of the four stations of the city. On Jan. 4, last he was returned to the Northern station when the last shift of captains was made. Illness overtook him soon afterwards. While he visited the station occasionally and transacted some important business, he practically had not been in active service for several months.

Captain Doherty enjoyed the reputation in and out of the department as being peculiarly endowed by nature to fill the role of an ideal captain of police. Humane in spirit and action, calm and cool in judgment, courteous in his bearing and dealings with the humblest as well as with the most influential, he exercised a

CAPT. P. H. DOHERTY ANSWERS TO THE FINAL ROLL CALL

Popular, Efficient and Respected Police Official After 30 Years of Honorable Service Goes to His Reward.

Capt. Patrick H. Doherty of the Northern Police station, one of the ablest members of the force and a most popular official, died at 6:30 this morning at his home, 1007 Rock street, after an extended illness. No death in the department in years has drawn such expression of regret and sympathy and the loss is not confined to that branch alone, for the city loses one of its prominent and highly respected citizens, who rejoiced in its advancement and lauded its achievements wherever he went.



CAPT. P. H. DOHERTY.

The deceased was a prominent member of Fall River council, No. 86, Knights of Columbus, Fall River Lodge No. 114, B. F. O. 2, and was affiliated with the Workmen and Foresters of America. He was none the less active in the Massachusetts Police Association, of which he was a diligent organizer. For a number of years he was identified with it as a member of the executive committee, the meetings of which required his attendance at Boston at frequent intervals. He had an important part, as a member of the committee, in mapping out and aiding to its fruition, the measures which have been of such material benefit to the police departments of this commonwealth, such as two days off a month, etc., and more recently laws which have afforded the police greater protection in the performance of their duty. At the state convention last year, he declined to stand for re-election and the decision was a source of keen regret to all interested in the success of the organization, who appreciated the local man's prominence in the work.

The sympathy of the police department and the community at large, will be extended to the family in their hour of affliction. Captain Doherty is survived by a widow, seven children, four brothers and two sisters. Mrs. Nora Doherty, the widow, is a sister of Former Mayor John T. Coughlin. The surviving children are John W. Doherty, employed in the public building department, Mrs. Marguerite Warren, wife of Dr. Thomas F. Warren, the Misses Helene and Grace Doherty, Robert, Frank and Charles Doherty. Two sisters left to mourn his loss are: Mrs. Daniel D. Sullivan and Miss Nora Doherty and four brothers, John and Robert of this city, the latter attached to the Postoffice, and Edward A. and Thomas Doherty of Boston, the former being a special deputy in the state tax commissioner's office, following a long service as a member of the board of assessors here. Among the nephews of the deceased is Representative John F. Doherty of the Ninth District. Funeral services will be held Thursday morning, followed by a requiem mass at St. Joseph's at 9 o'clock.

Acting City Marshal William H. Medley this afternoon completed arrangements for the representation of the police department at the funeral of Captain Patrick H. Doherty, Thursday morning. At the request of deceased two of his brothers, with Officer Thomas Connelly of the local department and Deputy Chief Cahill of Taunton, a warm personal friend, will be the bearers. The force will be officially represented by Lieutenants F. T. Barker, Hugh Egan, John Devine and Jeremiah N. Fahey.

PATRICK H. DOHERTY'S OBITUARY
FOUND IN A SCRAPBOOK ORIGINALLY OWNED BY:
MARY (MAME), ANNIE, KATHERINE H. (KIT) AND GRACE DOHERTY.

discretion and judgment in the performance of his duty, which won him the respect and admiration of all with whom he came in contact.

Reading human nature with rare skill, he applied his fund of common sense with extraordinary results, particularly in the solution of domestic difficulties, and his wholesome advice in hundreds of such cases bore excellent fruit. Newspaper men who were in intimate touch with him in his official capacity had abundant opportunity to observe his tactful handling of such problems. Realizing full well that a court appearance seldom solved domestic tribulation, Capt. Doherty fostered such proceedings only when all other avenues of peace were barred and many a couple today owe their happiness to the resourceful, patient and kindly captain who smoothed out their troubles and sent them home rejoicing, with no stigma of court action to furnish an excuse for further dissension.

An honest, God-fearing citizen, most capable police official and devoted husband and home loving father, Capt. Doherty has gone to his reward, with a record of faithful and devoted service in public and private, which well merited the commendation of the Master, "Well done, thou good and faithful servant."

(Continued on Page 23)

PATRICK H. DOHERTY - THE WITNESS STATEMENTS

(Editor's note: The following statements are transcribed from the official transcripts filed by Special Officer Doherty. They document much of the initial investigation. Sergeant Philip H. Harrington joined Patrick Doherty in the investigation. He was also promoted to Captain the following year.)

SPECIAL OFFICER PATRICK H. DOHERTY

Thursday August 4, 1892.

11.35 At this hour I, with Frank Wixon, entered the Borden house 92 Second street. Dr. Bowen met me at the kitchen door, and said "I am glad to see you." I inquired "what is the trouble?" He said "Mr. Borden is dead." I went into the next room, and there found the remains on a sofa covered with a sheet. In low tones the Doctor told me he was satisfied there was something wrong, for they were all sick the day before. He followed this by saying "to make matters worse, Mrs. Borden is lying dead up stairs. I suppose she saw the killing of her husband, and run up stairs, and died with fright."

I requested to see her; and on going up stairs found her lying on the floor, face downward, between the bed and dressing case. Several spots of blood was on the bed, and also a large tuft of hair. On examining the body, I found she was lying in a pool of blood. I informed the Doctor of the fact, and he expressed much surprise. I requested the Doctor, Mr. Wixon and reporter to remain by the bodies until I notified the Marshal.

The Doctor stated the deed was committed by an ax, cleaver, or some such instrument.

The servant girl said she let Mr. Borden in the front door at 10.50. With another officer I made a hurried search of the house from attic to cellar, but found no trace of any strange person or weapon.

Lizzie said she was in the barn, and said "no, I did not hear any noise whatever."

The work girl said she was upstairs, and heard no noise until Miss Lizzie called her.

Miss Lizzie had no suspicions on the farm hands.

(P. H. Doherty.)

A. M. Although Lizzie did not see the man who called about the store, still she did not explain how she knew it was he who called the second time.

(P. H.)

**SERGEANT PHILIP H. HARRINGTON AND
SPECIAL OFFICER PATRICK H. DOHERTY**

Thursday Aug. 4, 1892.

Miss Lizzie.

"Saw father, when he returned from the P.O. He sat down to read the paper. I went out to the barn, remained twenty minutes; returned, and found him dead. Saw no one in the yard when going to or returning from the barn. Heard no noise whatever while in the barn."

(To a question.)

Not even the opening or closing of the screen door.

"Why not, you were but a short distance, and would hear the noise

so made?"

"I was upstairs in the loft."

"What motive?"

"I don't know."

"Was it robbery?"

"I think not, for every thing appears all right, even to the watch in father's pocket, and ring on his finger."

"Have you any reason, no matter how slight, to suspect anybody?"

"N-n-no, I have not."

"Why hesitate?"

"Well, a few weeks ago father had angry words with a man about something."

"What was it?"

"I did not know at the time, but they were both very angry at the time; and the stranger went away."

"Did you see him at all?"

"No sir they were in another room; but from the tone of their voices, I knew things were not pleasant between them."

"Did father say anything about him, or his visit?"

"No sir. About two weeks ago he called again. They had a very animated conversation, during which they got very angry again. I heard father say "no sir, I will not let my store for any such business." Just before they separated, I heard father say "well, when you are in town again, come up, and I will let you know about it."

(P. Harrington.)

During this conversation with Lizzie, I cautioned her about what she might say at the present time. I said owing to the atrociousness of the crime, perhaps you are not in a mental condition to give as clear a statement of the facts as you will be tomorrow; and also by that time you may be able to tell more about the man who wished to hire the store. You may recollect of having heard his name, or of seeing him, and thereby be enabled to give a description of him, or may recollect of something said about him by your father; so I say it may be better for you not to submit to an interview until tomorrow, when you may be better able to recite what you know of the circumstances."

To this she replied "No, I think I can tell you all I know now, just as well as at any other time."

This conversation took place in Lizzie's room, on the second floor, in the presence of Miss Alice Russell, who sat in a chair by the door which leads to the front hall, by which I entered Lizzie's room.

Miss Russell was very pale, and much agitated, which she showed by short sharp breathing and wringing her hands. She spoke not a word.

Lizzie stood by the foot of the bed, and talked in the most calm and collected manner; her whole bearing was most remarkable under the circumstances. There was not the least indication of agitation, no sign of sorrow or grief, no lamentation of the heart, no comment on the horror of the crime, and no expression of a wish that the criminal be caught. All this, and something that, to me, is indescribable, gave birth to a thought that was most

(Continued on Page 19)

THE ROOM THAT LIZZIE BUILT

By Jane Rimer

(Editor's note: Many of us face the same threat of a cataclysmic life change when our children leave home and begin to make their own mark on the world. Such an event recently happened to our long-time writer and friend Jane Rimer. Here she exposed a hitherto unknown side of her thought process while waxing philosophically about the change and sharing her method of filling the void.)

With the recent marriage of our daughter and her moving out of the house, one empty room existed. I decided to take this opportunity to put into motion that which I had only read about: the creation of one's own space as an inner sanctum. The idea of surrounding oneself with things that are meaningful, positive and happy is good for one's soul, tranquility and blood pressure!

I love all things Lizzie and have for some forty years. So she became the new room's focal point. Rather out of the ordinary? Very likely. But my passion for the Bordens, apparently, knows no bounds.

Once the theme of the room was a definite go, I began to organize my collectibles and favorite books (non-Lizzie items among them). A needlessly neglected brown velour couch in a now seldom-used family room was brought up and put in Lizzie's Room. Raspberry walls seemed an appropriate color choice - Victorian yet easy to work with. Subordinate shades fell into place quite easily. Tones of rose, green, ecru and eggshell yellow appear in various combinations about the room in curtains, throw pillows, a fringed area rug and wall art.

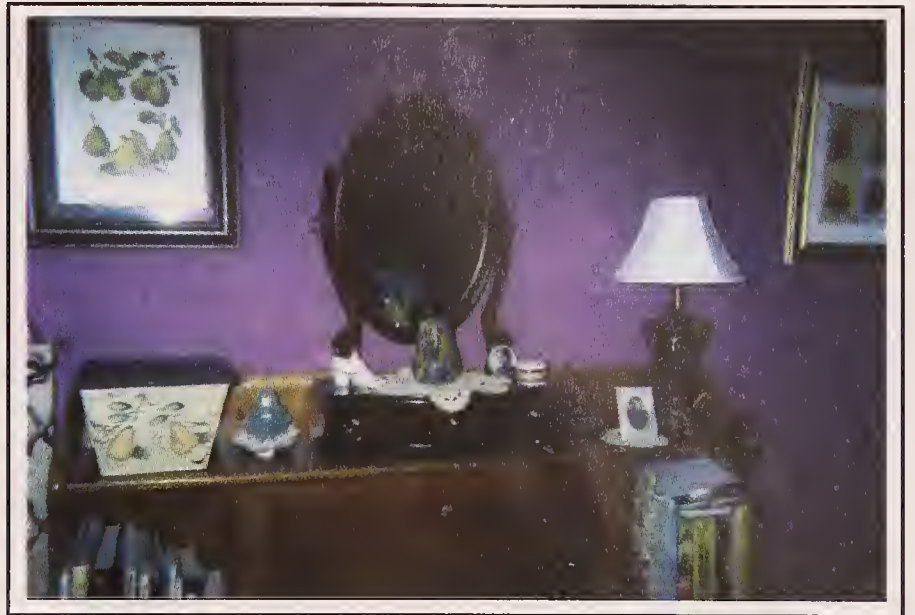
Pears are plentiful - in framed prints, painted on a vase, a box, a welcome sign and life-sized ones made of such materials as papiermache, wood, scented wax and glass.

An ongoing jig-saw puzzle on a corner table and a large desk are included as well. A hanging plant nestles each window. Lizzie herself is in a small, oval-shaped marble frame on a shelf.

My inner sanctum ties together years of interest in the Borden case and incorporates other things that have meaning for me. In this room I have taken charge in a way that heretofore I have not been able to do. It validates my uniqueness and this in itself is proving to be more beneficial than I could have ever imagined.

In my home, the room that Lizzie built has been a long time coming. Similar to an excavation site where layers are peeled away to expose evidence of another age, so have my years of living exposed me to changing depths of thinking and doing. In the beginning, there were books to read and library magazines to research on the Borden murder case. A movie made for television was produced on the subject. The Fall River Historical Society provided outstanding artifacts and the city's Oak Grove Cemetery brought one closer to the case's main characters. The 1992 Lizzie Borden Conference connected me with 400 others in search of ideas, old and new, about our girl. And then the divine, dare-I-dream-it wish came true: the house on Second Street was opened as a bed-and-breakfast. And then Maplecroft was revealed and explored. Perhaps another layer of Lizzie's world is yet to be exposed.

For me, for now, the room that Lizzie built symbolizes all that I have read, visited and explored pertaining to the Bordens.



THE TRIAL TESTIMONY OF MR. JOHN VINNICUM MORSE - CONCLUSION

PERMISSION TO TRANSCRIBE OFFICIAL BORDEN TRIAL TRANSCRIPT EXCERPTS WAS GRANTED TO THE LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY ON FEBRUARY 11, 2000
PERMISSION WAS GRANTED BY THE OFFICE OF JUDGE SUSAN DEL VECCHIO, CHIEF JUSTICE OF THE MASSACHUSETTS SUPERIOR COURT

(Editor's note: Herewith is concluded the trial testimony of Mr. John Vinnicum Morse. Since we have new information in this issue about Special Agent Patrick H. Doherty, we have decided to print his trial testimony in full. You will find it on page 7.

We gratefully acknowledge the talents and efforts of Mr. Harry Widdows from Spartanburg, South Carolina for the conversion of the original trial transcript into digital text, which enables us to bring it to you.)

Q. I understand, or I would not ask it, that you were there when they were downstairs in the cellar?

A. I was down there part of the time, not all the time; just a short time.

Q. Well, when you were there, what did they look into; what did they do?

A. Well, they merely looked over the different rooms.

Q. Did they find anything down there?

A. Except some axes--hatchets.

Q. Did you see them find those--see them have them?

A. I see them have them.

Q. How many officers were there?

A. I don't know: there were three or four, I think, down there.

Q. Would you know those axes if you were to see them?

A. I would not.

Q. Could you give us anything as to whether they were axes or hatchets?

A. I think they were mostly hatchets. I think there was one, what I call an axe.

Q. Long handle?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you examine them yourself?

A. I did not. Not to take them ---

Q. Do you know where they were taken from?

A. I don't know. When I saw these hatchets the doctor had them in his hands.

Q. Doctor who? Dr. Dolan?

A. Dr. Dolan, I think.

Q. The Medical examiner?

A. Yes, sir, that is the one.

Q. Did you see those implements again at any other time?

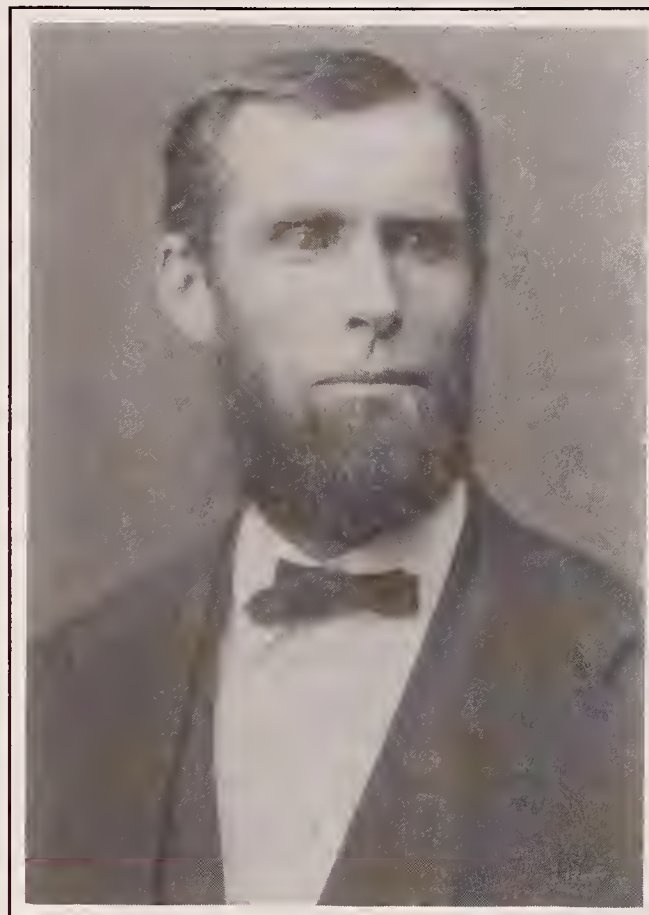
A. Several days after that, as I came around from the back of the house, there was a man on the east side of the back steps with a bag or sack, putting some axes into a sack.

Q. And when you say axes, do you mean hatchets as well?

A. Well, hatchets----I call them all axes.

Q. And did you know the man?

A. I did not.



JOHN VINNICUM MORSE

PHOTOGRAPH REPRODUCED COURTESY OF THE FALL RIVER HISTORICAL SOCIETY

Q. Was he a policeman, according to his uniform?

A. I should judge not.

Q. You think not: and do you know whether Dr. Dolan was there at that time or not?

A. He was not out there: I don't know whether he was in the house or not.

Q. After that time, so far as you know, you have not seen them?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you attend the preliminary examination at Fall River in the District Court?

A. I did.

Q. And were axes produced there--hatchets?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Are you able to say whether those were the ones or not?

A. I could not say.

Q. You cannot say about that. Were you there on Saturday, I am reminded to ask you?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Well, I allude to it as a possible day when there was quite a search made by the officers, a thorough search?

A. I was there every day afterwards for three or four months.

Q. Did you attend the burial?

A. I did.

Q. And so, during that time that you were away at the cemetery, you did not know what happened?

A. I do not.

Q. But after you came back to the house was that searching of the house carried on, continued?

A. I think it was.

Q. And how many officers were participating in that, Mr. Morse?

A. I don't know: four or five, I should think.

Q. Did you know any of them?

A. I did not.

Q. Did not know even the marshal? Well, so far as you saw on that day, where did they go?

A. What do you mean--about the house?

Q. Yes, what parts of the house?

A. Oh, I don't know. I should judge, from the sound, all over it.

Q. You think they went all over it by the sound? Up into the third story as well?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Down cellar?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And Miss Lizzie, the defendant, was there,--I mean in the house?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And Miss Emma, her sister, in the house?

A. Yes, she came that night after the murder; she was there all the time afterwards.

Q. Was there any objection, the slightest, made to their looking where they wanted to?

A. No, sir.

Q. Or opening anything?

A. No, sir.

MR. ROBINSON: That is all.
(Five minute recess).

Q. (By Mr. Robinson) Mr. Morse, with the Court's permission I would like to ask you one question, because I think you were possibly in error. Did you give correctly, do you think, the date of your sister's death--the year? I mean the first Mrs. Borden?

A. Why, I know that was just the best of my recollection, about that time. It may have been within a year or so of it, I think. I know it was during war times, and I think about the first of it too. It was during war times.

Q. Yes. Well, now, as you recall it, do you recollect that Miss Lizzie was born in July, 1860?

A. I make it she is about 32 or 33 years old.

Q. Yes, sir. But we are not now speaking of that, but whether you did not put the date of your sister's death about a year or two too early?

A. Well, I may.

Q. Yes. Miss Lizzie was a little girl two or three years old at

that time, wasn't she, at the time your sister died, instead of being about a year?

A. I thought she was about three years old when he married the second time. I have got my mind that way.

Q. Well, you are not certain now, correctly, then: but upon reflection I understand you to say you cannot now positively state the year?

A. No, I cannot.

Q. You may be in error a year or two?

A. Yes.

RE-DIRECT.

Q. (By Mr. Moody.) Be good enough to give us the name of your sister?

A. You want the whole name?

Q. Yes.

A. Sarah Anthony Morse.

Q. And by the request of Gov. Robinson I ask whether she died in Fall River or not?

A. She did.

Q. Was the second marriage in Fall River?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. You have spoken of some axes and hatchets that were taken away by an officer. Were they hatchets and axes which had handles on them?

A. Yes, sir; those I saw.

Q. All of them had handles?

A. I think so.

Q. Do you recall whether it was Mr. Edson who took them away?

A. I don't.

Q. Do you know Mr. Edson?

A. I do not.

Q. Did you see a man in the preliminary hearing who testified with reference to taking those hatchets away?

A. I don't recollect that I did.

Q. Is Second Street a paved street, macadam street or a mere dirt street at that part that passes Mr. Borden's house?

A. Why, I think that is macadamized there. I think it is. I know it is very hard.

Q. You spoke of using a lamp to go to bed. Is there any gas in the house?

A. No, sir.

Q. Will you give us the best judgment you have as to the time when the person came in and went up stairs into Miss Lizzie Borden's room on the evening of Wednesday?

A. To the best of my recollection, about quarter past nine.

(Editor's note: Please keep in mind that the complete trial is now available in digital format on the Internet at Dr. Stefani Koorey's magnificent website, www.lizzieandrewborden.com. In addition, she has an embarrassment of many other Lizzie Borden treasures. Visit her website and plan to be pleasurably surprised!)

PATRICK H. DOHERTY

(Continued from Page 1)

John and Mary moved to Wareham, Massachusetts where their eleven children were born. John became a United States citizen on September 12, 1856.

JOHN AND MARY'S CHILDREN

1. Mary Doherty was born on September 23, 1851, death date is unknown.
2. Margaret Doherty, born July 3, 1853 and died August 10, 1854 in Wareham, Massachusetts.
3. Daniel Doherty, born October 6, 1854 and died August 25, 1860 in Wareham, Massachusetts.
4. John F. Doherty, born February 4, 1856, and died July 22, 1937 in Fall River.
5. Margaret Doherty, born August 29, 1857 and died August 10, 1858 in Wareham, Massachusetts.
6. **Patrick H. Doherty**, born August 10, 1859 and died June 28, 1915 in Fall River.
7. Hannorah L Doherty, born July 12, 1861 and died January 1, 1955 in Fall River.
8. Edward Andrew Doherty, born August 4, 1863, death date is unknown.
9. Thomas Doherty, born March 21, 1865 and died September 30, 1937 in Fall River.
10. Daniel Doherty, born February 3, 1867 and died September 17, 1868 in Wareham, Massachusetts.
11. Robert E. Doherty, born November 3, 1868 and died May 17, 1938 in Fall River.

As previously stated, Patrick H. was born August 10, 1859 in Wareham, Massachusetts, according to vital statistics, however, his obituary claims he was born in Peoria, Illinois.

MY CONNECTION TO PATRICK H. DOHERTY

My lineage stems from Patrick H. Doherty's brother John F. Doherty.

1. John F. had a son Robert Joseph Doherty.
2. Robert Joseph had a son Robert Edward Doherty, Sr.
3. Robert Edward, Sr. had a son Robert Edward Doherty, Jr. who was I, although folks generally call me by my nickname Beau.

So you see, Patrick H. Doherty was my great grand uncle. His first job in Fall River was on the old Fall River Line. He was appointed to the police force on December 30, 1885.

MY GRANDFATHER'S FAMILY

My grandfather, Robert Joseph Doherty, had an amazing family. His brother, John F. Doherty, Sr. was a prominent state legislator who ran for Lieutenant Governor in 1922 with his running mate "Honey" Fitzgerald, who was the grandfather of our late President, John F. Kennedy. They lost! Another of his brothers, Edward A. Doherty, was a brilliant Deputy of Taxation for the state of Massachusetts.

Patrick H. Doherty married Nora E. Coughlin, daughter of Thomas Coughlin, and sister of Fall River Mayor John Coughlin and Margaret Foley. Nora was born and died in Fall River. She passed away on May 28, 1933, of myocarditis.

THE CHILDREN OF PATRICK H. AND NORA E. DOHERTY

1. John W. Doherty was born in 1877 at Fall River and died on February 2, 1948 in Fall River. He worked in the Public Building Department and was married to Kathryn O'Reilly.
2. Marguerite Doherty Warren was the wife of Dr. Thomas F. Warren.
3. Helene C. Doherty born in 1894 at Fall River and died of multiple burns on October 15, 1948. She worked as a clerk in the children's department at *McWhirr's* a famous Fall River department store.
4. Grace Doherty was born in 1900 at Fall River and died of a cerebral hemorrhage on June 3, 1964.
5. Robert L. Doherty was born in 1898 at Fall River and died of epilepsy in his 18th year on March 30, 1916.
6. Frank P. Doherty was born December 29, 1902 at Fall River and died on March 27, 1969 of coronary occlusion. He was married to Kathleen Kiley.
7. Charles T. Doherty was born in 1910 at Fall River and died in Taunton State Hospital on March 30, 1956 of congestive heart failure.



PATRICK H. DOHERTY

AUGUST 10, 1859 - JUNE 28, 1915

IN HIS CAPTAIN'S UNIFORM ON THE
FALL RIVER POLICE DEPARTMENT

- FIRST TIME PRINTING RIGHTS GRANTED TO THE LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY -

On the back of this photograph, faintly inscribed in pencil,
and almost worn away by time, are written the following words:

"Papa

Patrick Doherty

who was first

Police Officer to

Interview Lizzie

Borden

murdered her parents"

PHOTOGRAPH REPRODUCED COURTESY OF THE BEAU DOHERTY FAMILY
©2002 ROBERT EDWARD DOHERTY, JR.

On the day of the Borden hatchet-murders, the first police presence at the scene of the crime, 92 Second Street, was Patrolman George W. Allen. He was sent there by Marshal Rufus B. Hilliard, after a telephone call was received at the police station at 11:15 A.M. stating that there was a "row at the Borden house." After viewing the dead body of Andrew Borden, Allen deputized John S. Sawyer, a painter, to guard the property and returned to the police station to report to Marshall Hilliard. The body of Mrs. Borden had not yet been discovered.

Subsequent documented facts show that the official police investigation began with my Great Grand Uncle, Special Officer Patrick H. Doherty. Officer Doherty arrived at 92 Second Street even as Officer Allen was reporting to Marshal Hilliard. He interviewed Miss Lizzie Borden, and many others who were associated with that horrific event. He was the 19th witness to testify for the prosecution at the 'Trial of the Century.'

MY GREAT AUNTS

My father, Robert Edward Doherty, had four favorite aunts, Mary (Mame), Annie, Katherine H. (Kit) and Grace Doherty. They were the daughters of John F. Doherty, brother of Patrick H. and lived together on Highland Avenue in Fall River not too far from *Maplecroft*, Miss Lizzie's self-named home on French Street.

1. Mary E. Doherty, born July 9, 1883 in Wareham, Massachusetts and died in Fall River.
2. Annie Louise Doherty, born March 20, 1884 in Wareham, Massachusetts and died September 13, 1986 in Fall River.
3. Katherine H. Doherty, born July 4, 1887 in Wareham, Massachusetts, died February 19, 1983 in Fall River.
4. Grace J. Doherty, born March 5, 1897 in Wareham, Massachusetts and died January 3, 1988 in Fall River.

My father was very close to his aunts. The photographs of Patrick H. Doherty, reproduced here, were given to my father by them, and Dad passed them on to me. To the best of my knowledge, they are the only remaining family photographs of my great grand uncle.

In the early 1960's I used to visit my great aunts almost every Sunday at their home on Highland Avenue. Although I was only in my early teens, I took an interest in their family stories that revolved around my grandfather Robert, his brother John, and their uncles, Patrick H. and Edward A. Doherty. It's hard to remember all the specific discussions we had, but I do remember them claiming that Patrick was one of the first policemen on the scene and that he had found two axes and two hatchets in the basement and discovered that Lizzie had purchased poison prior to the murders. I know they were very fond of their uncle, although he died when they were young. As a teenager I specifically remember Annie and Katherine talking about their uncle's experiences in the case. I also distinctly remember them telling me they used to tease Lizzie after the trial was over. God only knows if this is true. However knowing Aunt Annie it probably was.

My aunts saved the obituary of Great Grand Uncle Patrick in a scrapbook, which is transcribed elsewhere in this issue of the

Lizzie Borden Quarterly. By reading it, you can see that he was held in the highest esteem both in and out of the Police Department.

Out of all the children Great Grand Uncle Patrick had, there is only one living grandchild. Her name is Patricia Doherty Foley, whose father was Frank P. Doherty. She was born rather late in her father's life, on October 29, 1953. Her father was fifty-one at the time of her birth. The only one of his siblings she knew was his sister, Grace. Her father passed away March 27, 1969 when she was fifteen. Patricia has recently been in contact with me and we have been sharing family information. She is grateful for the connection and wants her children, Lauren and Sean, to know about their heritage.

Talk about strange coincidences, Cousin Patricia is the Data Evaluation Specialist for the QUEST Program, part of the *Center for Developmental Education* at, of all places, *Bristol Community College* (BCC) in Fall River. As you all know, BCC publishes the *Lizzie Borden Quarterly*. To extend the coincidence a bit further, her residence is right around the corner from the Oak Grove Cemetery.

Patricia is a big fan of the *Lizzie Borden Quarterly* and has written that she is flattered her grandfather will be featured in this issue.

PATRICK H. DOHERTY - THE TRIAL TESTIMONY

(Continued from Page 6)

Q. Whom did you overtake?

A. Mr. Wixon.

Q. Deputy Sheriff?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you go together or did you go ahead of Mr. Wixon?

A. We went together after I had met Mr. Wixon. We went together. I went in the yard ahead.

Q. When you got to the yard had a crowd collected about the house?

A. No, very few there when I got there first.

Q. Was there any one in the yard at that time?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Who was in the yard at that time?

A. Mr. Manning.

Q. The reporter?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And he was at what part of the yard?

A. He was sitting on the steps.

Q. Front or rear?

A. Rear.

Q. You went into the house, I take it?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Tell us whom you found there after you got in?

A. Dr. Bowen met me at the screen door, and he said, "I am glad to see you." I said, "Doctor, what is the matter?"

- Q. I don't care for that Mr. Doherty. You had some talk with Dr. Bowen, and thence you went where?
- A. I went into the sitting room where Mr. Borden was.
- Q. At that time had Mr. Borden's body been covered by anything?
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. Covered with a sheet?
- A. With a sheet.
- Q. Did you make any observation at all or simply look at him? Tell us what you did in respect to the body?
- A. Dr. Bowen removed the sheet and I looked at the body, and we had some conversation, Dr. Bowen and I.
- Q. Did you make any special observation of the blood or any notes of the blood at that time?
- A. I looked at it carefully, I thought.
- Q. Well, tell us what you observed with reference to it?
- A. Well, the blood was fresh, in my estimation. I think it was fresh, what I saw.
- Q. Where did you go then?
- A. I went up stairs.
- Q. Tell us into which chamber or which room you went?
- A. Went into the front chamber on the north side of the building where Mrs. Borden was lying.
- Q. Tell us what occurred in there?
- A. Dr. Bowen pointed out the body and I went over, and the body was between the dressing case and the bed, and I wanted to see the head, and there was no room for me to go between the body and the bed or body and dressing-case, and I pulled the bed one side and walked up, and I stooped down and looked at the head, moved one of the hands to look at the head, and she was cut. I told Dr. Bowen that she had been murdered too.
- Q. Had Dr. Bowen said anything to you as to the cause of her death before that?
- A. Yes, sir.

MR. ROBINSON. Wait a moment. How is it competent?

MR. MOODY. Possibly not very material. I do not know but what it is competent. The only reason is, I asked him if he hadn't told Mr. Doherty she had died of fright. I only stated what had already appeared before the jury, that he had made that statement in reply.

MR. ROBINSON. There is no proof of that. He only said so.

MR. MOODY. I know it, and I have a right to contradict him. It is not of very much importance to make any trouble about it. Of course I suggest this to your Honors under the statute.

MASON. C. J. It does not seem to be important.

MR. MOODY. It does not seem to be important,

but only because I have said so to the jury it perhaps seems to me more important than it is, and I do not think I am of very much importance in this matter. I will not press it any farther.

- Q. Now, did you observe anything with reference to Mrs. Borden's head?
- A. Yes, sir. I saw it was cut and hacked, and was lying in a pool of blood.
- Q. Did you observe anything with reference to the blood?
- A. Yes, sir. It seemed to be hard, seemed as if it had been there some time.
- Q. Did you observe anything else about those premises?
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. What?
- A. I saw blood spots on the pillow shams and a bunch of hair on the bed, black hair.
- Q. Well, describe that here, and tell upon what part of the bed it was.
- A. I think it was about on the middle of the bed, right on the spread.
- Q. I don't know, I ask for information, was that a piece of hair that appeared to have been severed or a piece of hair that ladies sometimes use which is not their own?
- A. It appeared to be a piece of hair which had been severed, I think.
- Q. Then how large a piece of hair was it?
- A. Well, it was half as large as my fist, I should think.
- Q. Did you take that piece of hair away?
- A. I did not.
- Q. Left it there?
- A. I left it right there.
- Q. Have you seen it since?
- A. I have not.
- Q. You know nothing about where it went?
- A. No, sir.
- Q. Did you observe anything else in the room?
- A. I can't remember anything --- people there.
- Q. I don't remember whether you saw the handkerchief or not. Did you, Mr. Doherty?
- A. No, sir, I did not.
- Q. Did you observe a sewing machine or chair anywhere in the room?
- A. I did not observe a sewing machine; it seems that I saw a chair. I think I did.
- Q. Now was there any disturbance of the furniture in the room? Had anything been turned upside down? Was the chair upright?
- A. When I went there?
- Q. Yes.
- A. I think it was; the chair was in position.

Q. Was there any piece of furniture that had apparently been disturbed or knocked over?

A. I don't think there was.

Q. Did you observe anything of that sort?

A. I did not.

Q. Will you describe more particularly in what position you saw Mrs. Borden when you first saw her?

A. She was lying face downward, her head to the east, with her hands something like in this position. (Clasping hands above the head.)

Q. What else? How was she with reference to the bed?

A. She was close to the bed. I think her feet projected a little below the foot of the bed.

Q. About how far was her head from the wall?

A. It was, I thought, pretty close, probably six or seven inches, it seems to me now. I moved one of the hands to look at the head and I had room to put my hands between hers and the wall.

Q. Her hand was then outstretched?

A. Yes, sir. It seemed to be this way. (Indicating)

Q. Then what did you do, Mr. Doherty? Do I understand---that is, as you remember it now (Referring to the distance of Mrs. Borden's head from the wall, as covered by the question above.)

A. Yes, sir.

Q. You have spoken of lifting the head. Did you move the body in any other way at that time?

A. No, sir.

Q. Neither toward the wall or from the wall?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you turn the body over?

A. I did not.

Q. After that was done, what did you do?

A. I went to notify the Marshal.

Q. That is, you did nothing else in the house at that time?

A. Not at that time, no, sir.

Q. Did you go to the police station?

A. I did not; I went to the nearest telephone that I could get.

Q. Perhaps you will tell us where that telephone was.

A. Mr. Gorman's or Mr. McDermott's undertaking rooms, I don't know which.

Q. That was not far from the house?

A. No, sir, that was round the corner of Spring street.

Q. After you had telephoned, did you return to the house?

A. I did.

Q. By the way, I did not ask you who was there when you first got there. I do not know that it is of importance, but I will ask you,---Who beside Dr. Bowen, in the house, I mean?

A. Miss Sullivan. That was all I saw in the kitchen when I first went there.

Q. Well, did you see Miss Lizzie Borden at any time the first

time you went?

A. No, sir.

Q. Or Miss Russell?

A. No, sir.

Q. Or Mrs. Churchill?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you go into the dining-room at all that time?

A. Not the first time, no, sir.

Q. Coming then to the second return to the house: You returned after you had telephoned?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. When you returned the second time, did you see anybody you had not seen before?

A. Yes, sir, Miss Borden and Mrs. Churchill.

Q. Where did you see her?

A. In the kitchen, I think.

Q. Was anyone with her?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Who?

A. Miss Russell and Mrs. Churchill.

Q. Did you have any talk with her at that time?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Will you be kind enough to state what it was?

A. Yes, sir. I said, "Miss Borden, where were you when this was done?" She said, "It must have been done while I was in the barn." "Was there a Portuguese working for your father over the river?" She said, "No, sir, Mr. Johnson and Mr. Eddy worked for my father." "Were they here this morning?" "No, sir, Mr. Eddy is sick. They would not hurt my father anyhow." I asked her if she had heard any noise or outcries, or screams and she said, "No, sir. I heard a peculiar noise." "What kind of a noise, Miss Borden?" "I think it was something like scraping, scraping noise."

Q. Did you have any further talk with her?

A. I don't think I did.

Q. What did you do then?

A. I asked the work-girl then.

Q. You had some conversation with her which I do not care to go in?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. After talking with Bridget, what did you do?

A. Mr. Mullaly came into the room and he commented on Mr. Borden and I told him Mrs. Borden was dead up stairs.

Q. After talking with Mullaly you did something,---what did you do?

A. We went up and looked at Mrs. Borden.

Q. Did you do something,---did you go through the house?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Describe your journey through the house.

A. I went up the back stairs to the attic. The work-girl was with us. She showed us her room and a couple of other rooms,---one had a bed in it. We looked round there, and we worked

our way down, every room that was opened we looked in, and we got down into the cellar.

Q. Did Bridget have any keys with her, do you know?

A. She had keys of the spare room up stairs where she slept herself, that is all.

Q. You went into all the rooms you could get into and went down cellar?

A. Yes.

Q. You found nothing or nobody?

A. We found nothing or nobody.

Q. You went down cellar: Tell us what you did down there.

A. We went down cellar, we went into two or three dark places, wood or coal rooms or something. We separated. I got over near the sink and I noticed a pail and some towels.

Q. Pass from those.

A. Mr. Mullaly was looking at something; I came and looked over his shoulder; he had a hatchet in his hands.

Q. Do you recall what the hatchet was?

A. I thought it was one with a wide blade.

Q. Do you mean anyone of these four instruments? (Showing them)

A. Looks something like that large or small one; I thought the blade---

Q. The claw-hammered hatchet?

A. I could not say the claw hammered.

Q. You saw him with a hatchet?

A. Yes, sir.

MR. KNOWLTON. The witness designates the claw-hammered hatchet.

MR. ROBINSON. Let it remain as it is.

Q. Now I don't care about any sort of detail in going into these hatchets and axes, these four, but did you find anything else, except that hatchet that Mr. Mullaly had in his hand?

A. No, sir.

Q. At that time did you find these axes or the other hatchets?

A. I did not see but one.

Q. And that is the one you described as a hatchet?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Anything else occur down at that time in the cellar?

A. No, sir.

Q. After that, where did you go?

A. I came up the stairs and out in the yard again.

Q. Did you look about the yard at all?

A. No, sir, not then.

Q. What did you do after you went to the yard?

A. I went right down to the office. There was a messenger came for me from the Marshal to report at his office.

Q. Did you do so?

A. I did.

Q. Did you see Miss Borden again at all? Did you go to her room?

A. I did.

Q. Before you went to the Marshal or after?

A. Before.

Q. Before you went to the Marshal?

A. Yes.

Q. Do you know when she had gone up to her rooms?

A. No, sir, I do not.

Q. Was it while you were down cellar, or before you went down cellar, or don't you know?

A. I don't know.

Q. But as I understand you first saw her and had the conversation you told, down stairs?

A. I did, yes, sir, on the first floor.

Q. Then later you saw her in her room?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Tell us what occurred in the room.

A. I looked round,---after she concluded to open the door I went just beyond the threshold and looked round and out again.

Q. You spoke something about "After she had concluded",---Describe what occurred at the door.

A. I went to the door, went to open it. I opened it two or three inches and she said "One minute", and shut the door on me, and it was a minute, I should think, before she opened the door for me, fully a minute.

Q. Did you go in?

A. I did.

Q. Anyone with you then?

A. Mr. Mullaly was behind me.

Q. Who else was in the room beside Miss Borden?

A. I think Miss Russell; I am not positive on that point.

Q. Did you have any talk with her at that time, or not?

A. No, sir, I did not.

Q. What did you do in the room at that time?

A. Just glanced around, that's all.

Q. Now if you please, return to the time you saw Miss Borden in the kitchen. Can you give any description, and if so do it the best you can,---of the dress that she had on when she was down stairs in the kitchen?

A. I thought she had a light blue dress with a bosom in the waist, or something like a bosom. I have a faint recollection; that is all I can say about it. I thought she had a light blue dress with a bosom in the waist or something like a bosom, and that is about all the description I can give.

Q. Do you remember anything else about it?

A. I don't.

Q. Any figure,---do you remember any figure?

A. I thought there was a small figure on the dress, a little spot like.

Q. What color was the figure?

A. Something---I can't tell exactly.

Q. Well, if that is the best you can do, I will ask you if it was

that dress? (Showing witness a dress)

A. No, I don't think so.

Q. Did you return again after going to the marshal's that morning?

A. I came as far as the door.

Q. Did you go in again?

A. I did not at that time.

Q. Now you made some search in the barn that afternoon, did you?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Were you up with the squad of officers who pitched the hay over?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. I will ask you what the temperature was up in that loft in the barn?

A. It was very warm.

Q. How was the air for breathing?

A. Very bad. It was stifling hot there: very bad.

Q. Did you notice anything about whether the barn was dusty or otherwise?

A. I couldn't say.

Q. How long did you stay in the barn?

A. I stayed an hour, fully.

Q. Now at some time, and I don't know whether it was this day or not, so I ask it now---did you have a talk with Bridget, or rather, did Miss Borden, have a talk with Bridget about the back cellar door?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. When was that, as we are on that subject?

A. Friday morning, the fifth of August, at seven o'clock---about seven o'clock.

Q. And where were you when you had the talk? Describe it; describe what was said.

A. Friday morning Lieut. Edson and myself went in the kitchen. Miss Borden came out from the sitting room, and she said, "Maggie, are you sure the cellar door was fastened?" and Maggie made a reply, "Yes, marm."

Q. Did you go into the house at all again on the Thursday after you left the first time?

A. Thursday evening about nine o'clock.

Q. You took part in some searches, did you, Saturday?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you search there at all after that, Mr. Doherty?

A. Never after Thursday.

Q. That closed your connection with the matter?

A. With the house.

Q. Had you ever been in that house before?

A. Never.

Q. Or did you ever go about it after this morning?

A. Never, no, sir.

CROSS EXAMINATION.

Q. (By Mr. Robinson.) Will you give the time that you arrived there, Mr. Doherty, the first time?

A. Eleven thirty-five, twenty-five minutes of twelve, I say.

Q. And do you remember who was there at the time?

A. I do.

Q. Who were they?

A. Dr. Bowen, Bridget Sullivan, Mr. Sawyer, Mr. Manning.

Q. And any others outside?

A. A few outside.

Q. Do you know them?

A. I know one.

Q. Who was that?

A. Mr. Rich---I believe his name is Rich---inside the gate in the yard.

Q. (By Mr. Moody.) Inside the gate, did you say?

A. Inside the gate in the yard, or at the gate.

Q. (By Mr. Robinson.) Did you see Mr. Donnelly?

A. I did not.

Q. Or Mr. Stevens?

A. Mr. Stevens, the reporter?

Q. Yes.

A. I don't want to be sure; I think there was another reporter talking to the work girl, but I can't say I saw Mr. Stevens.

Q. Well, Mr. Harrington?

A. No, sir.

MR. MOODY. Mr. Harrington, the officer?

MR. ROBINSON. Yes, Mr. Harrington the officer.

Q. Mr. Medley, the officer?

A. No, sir.

Q. And Mr. Rich---do you know his full name?

A. I do not. I am under the impression it is Augustus.

Q. He is a resident of the city there?

A. Yes, sir: he has got a small place of business just below the house.

Q. How large was that space, to the best of your judgment, between the bureau and the bed in the spare chamber?

A. I should say it was two or three feet.

Q. Well, you called it about a couple of feet before, when you told about it before?

A. Probably I did.

Q. At any rate, the space was so well filled up that you could not get in on either side very well?

A. Exactly.

Q. The bed on one side and the bureau on the other, and Mrs. Borden's body about filled it?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And as you describe it, the arms were up over the head?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Now you know that Dr. Bowen was in the house before that, and do you know whether Dr. Bowen had been there at that

time?

A. I don't think he was.

Q. You did not see him? Did you see Mr. Harrington there at any time afterwards, the officer?

A. I didn't see him there till four o'clock in the afternoon.

Q. And did you see Mr. Medley there at any time?

A. I did.

Q. When?

A. About 12: just before 12, I think.

Q. Was he in the house or out?

A. He was in the entry, at the screen door.

Q. You have spoken about going into Miss Lizzie's room and just glancing around. That was all you did, wasn't it?

A. That was all, sir.

Q. And did you go into any other rooms above the stairs,---I mean on the second floor?

A. I don't think I did; they were locked.

Q. Did you go around up the back stairs and go into Mr. Borden's room?

A. I did not.

Q. Did you go up to the attic?

A. I did, sir.

Q. Wasn't that door of Mr. Borden's room unlocked for you by Bridget?

A. I don't remember, sir, as it was. I went into all the rooms that we found unlocked.

Q. Did you make any examination of the dresses?

A. I did not.

Q. Or look for any marks on them?

A. No, sir.

Q. Or anybody's clothes?

A. No, sir.

Q. You were not one of the officers, if there were any, that pulled open the door between Miss Lizzie's room and Mr. Borden's room?

A. No, sir.

Q. You did not see that done?

A. No, sir.

Q. That Second street you were quite familiar with, I suppose?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. It is a street of great thoroughfare, heavy teams and carriages and persons passing through constantly?

A. Yes, sir, I should say so.

Q. Where was Mr. Sawyer when you arrived there at first?

A. Just inside the screen door, with his hand on the latch.

Q. And Mr. Manning?

A. Sitting on the steps.

Q. Outside?

A. Outside.

Q. Did you see Mr. Allen, the officer?

A. I did not at that time.

Q. Did you see while you were there Miss Russell or Mrs. Churchill fanning Miss Lizzie?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. When was that?

A. When I spoke to Miss Lizzie.

Q. That was during that conversation?

A. Miss Russell was standing there with a paper or fan, I won't be positive which.

Q. Are you very clear about the dress---the description of her dress?

A. I have a faint recollection of it, that it was a light blue dress.

Q. But it is only a faint recollection?

A. Well, I am confident it is not as dark nor as full a blue as that.

Q. You think not.

MR. MOODY. As this dress that has been produced?

THE WITNESS. Yes, sir.

Q. The one there on the table. And last August you were somewhat doubtful about it, were you not---whether it was a light blue or a dark blue?

A. I don't think it was.

Q. You don't remember about that? You didn't see her with the pink wrapper on later, did you?

A. No, sir; I didn't. I didn't see her but once after that, and that was in the evening.

Q. Then you went there on Friday, also, I think you said?

A. I was there all the morning, from one o'clock Friday morning till half past eight, in the yard.

Q. Do you know what dress she had on that morning?

A. I thought she had the same one on.

Q. Which one?

A. The light blue.

Q. You think that is so, do you?

A. I think so. I can't say so positively.

Q. You didn't really notice much about it, did you?

A. No, sir; not a great deal.

Q. What?

A. Not any more than I did the first time; a very short interview there.

Q. You went down cellar and saw what, of these tools?

A. I saw Mr. Mullaly with the short-handled hatchet in his hand.

Q. Did you see anything wrong about that hatchet in any way?

A. I did not,---hardly look at it; I spoke to him about it.

Q. You think it is the one with the claw head?

A. I think it is.

Q. Did you see this at any time? (Hatchet without handle)

A. No, sir.

Q. You don't know anything about that?

A. I do not.

Q. Were you there in the cellar with Mr. Fleet?

A. No, sir.

Q. And you don't know anything about that?
A. I do not.

Q. When did you first see it?
A. I think this is the first I see of that, as far as I know. I don't know as I ever saw it before today.

Q. Did you go to the house to bring away the hatchets and the axes?
A. No, sir; I didn't go there for that purpose.

Q. Did you bring them away?
A. No, sir.

Q. Do you know who did?
A. I do. Lieut. Edson, Francis L. Edson.

Q. Do you know what he brought?
A. I do.

Q. And what?
A. Brought two axes and two hatchets.

Q. And he did not bring this, the hatchet without a handle?
A. I don't think he did. He showed me what he had. He called my attention to what he had.

Q. And you didn't see any such thing as that there?
A. No, sir.

Q. What day was it he showed you what he had?
A. Friday morning, at six o'clock.

Q. Was that the time he brought them away?
A. Shortly after six, before half past six, in the morning. Between six and half past, at the time he brought them away.

Q. He showed them to you, I understand, at the station?
A. No, sir; coming out. I was at the front gate, stationed at the front gate.

Q. The front gate of the station?
A. The residence, 92 Second Street.

Q. You were up there quite early Friday morning?
A. I went there at one o'clock.

Q. One o'clock night?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Were there persons around the house that night?
A. There were.

Q. How many inside the yard?
A. Only the officers inside.

Q. There were officers there on duty?
A. There were four of us, I think.

Q. All the time?
A. All the time.

Q. Those were inside the yard, and how many on the outside?
A. I think there was one patrolling up and down in front of the house, and there were four of us inside of the premises.

Q. You stayed there all night?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you remember what dress Bridget had on that morning?
A. She had a calico dress, I think. I don't remember fully.

Q. Well, what was its color?
A. I can not say. It thought it was kind of a brown calico dress.

Q. A brown, dark dress?
A. Yes, sir.

Q. That is your recollection of it?
A. That is my recollection of it.

PATRICK H. DOHERTY - THE WITNESS STATEMENTS

(Continued from Page 8)

revolting. I thought, at least, she knew more than she wished to tell.

I arrived at the house about 12.15 or 12.20 N. The conversation with Lizzie was about five minutes later. She was dressed in a striped house wrapper, full waist, and caught on the side by a bright red ribbon, which was tied in a bow in front. The stripes were on the pink shade, and between them was a dark figure.

After leaving her, I went down in the kitchen where was Dr. Bowen, Asst. Fleet, Dr. Dolan, Bridget and several others.

Dr. Bowen had scraps of paper in his hand, on which there was some writing. He and I spoke about them, and he tried to put some of them together. He said "it is nothing, it is something about, I think, my daughter going through somewhere." If I recollect correctly, it was addressed to Emma; but about that I am not sure.

The Doctor then said "it does not amount to anything, and taking the lid off the kitchen stove, he dropped the pieces in. There was very little fire in the stove, and the ashes which were on top looked as though paper had been burned there.

About this time someone said something about milk. I looked in the direction from which the voice came, and saw Dr. Dolan standing at the table. He called me and said, "Phil, I want you to take care of this milk, the family has been sick, and I don't want you to leave it until I relieve you."

In a few minutes Mr. Fleet gave orders to several of the officers to cover the several roads leading out of town. Devine and Garvey he sent on Stafford Road, and I was ordered to cover Bay street. I told him about Dr. Dolan's orders to me in regard to the milk. He replied "yes, I heard him when he spoke to you, but I will take care of the milk, and you go down the lower road." I spoke to him about the Ferry street depot, and he said "that is covered."

When at the foot of William Street I saw two suspicious characters, and brought them to the station. Later when the Marshal had a talk with them, he ordered them locked up.

Officer Leonard and I had a call to the N. B. Savings Bank. There we found a Portuguese who was drawing out his full deposit, of sixty odd dollars. He could speak English but poorly, so we brought him to the station. Officer Leonard went for an interpreter, and the suspect giving a satisfactory account of himself, he was allowed to go.

I then went to the Borden barn, where the Marshal gave orders to several officers to search the barn thoroughly, and took part in the

work down stairs. It was at this time I made known by my suspicions of Miss Lizzie.

To the Marshal I said "I don't like that girl."

He said "what is that?"

I repeated, and further said "under the circumstances she does not act in a manner to suit me; it is strange, to say the least."

When we finished the first floor of the barn, we ascended to the loft, the Marshal going just ahead of me. There I found officers Conners, Doherty and J. Riley. The Marshal said, "I want you men to go give this place complete going over; every nook and corner must be looked into, and this hay turned over." I then said to him "if any girl can show you or me, or anybody else what could interest her up here for twenty minutes, I would like to have her do it."

The Marshal shook his head and said something about it being incredible; his words I cannot give. He assisted in the search for some minutes, and then went downstairs. I remained until we were satisfied our duty was done.

After this, went to the cellar of the house. On entering the washing room, lying on the floor were two axes and one hatchet. There, with another, which was then missing, I had previously seen up stairs, I think in the hand of Dr. Dolan. Immediately I went in search of the missing hatchet, and found it in the first cellar. I gave it to Asst. Fleet, and suggested placing it in some place where it could not be readily found. This he did.

The cellar was thoroughly searched by Asst. Marshal Fleet, Dr. Dolan, and one or two others, whom at present I cannot recall, but think they were officers J. Riley and Mullaly and myself.

After this, with several others I assisted in the search of the yard. This being completed, the Marshal directed officer Doherty and myself to take all the yards on Third street south of Dr. Chagnon's. Nothing was found in either yard.

At Dr. Chagnon's house we found his assistant, but he was at Bowenville during the forenoon, and the Doctor and family were at Pawtucket R. I., leaving there about 5. A. M.

When the Doctor's assistant was on his way to Bowenville, he called at Dr. Collet's, and requested his (Collet's) son to go and care for the house. He was busy at the Drug store, and could not go, so the assistant went off.

Afterwards Dr. Collet's daughter Lucy was sent up to Dr. Chagnon's to await callers. She could not gain entrance, for the door was locked, so she remained in the yard from 9.45 A. M., or thereabouts, to 12 N, when the assistant returned. She is positive no one could go through the yard without being seen by her. She heard no noise.

The next yard contains a barn, and is occupied by John Crowe, a mason and builder. On the day in question John Denny, a stone cutter, employed by Mr. Crowe, was working in there all day. He is positive no one went through the yard. There were other men drawing stone to the yard all day, and they saw nothing of any suspicious character.

Patrick McGowan is the man who was eating pears on the pile of lumber, and said to have been on the fence. He is employed by Mr. Crowe, and left the yard about 10. A. M.

The next house is occupied by Mrs. Crapo. She and the girl were at home all Thursday August 4th, but heard no noise; neither did they see any person go through their yard.

The Fall River Ice Co. is next South; and in this yard there are several men constantly employed. We saw them, and they reported nobody came their way. In the morning shortly before the murder, Dr. Kelly's girl, Mary, was talking to Bridget over the fence, neither saw anyone in or around the yard.

On this morning Mrs. Dr. Bowen was sitting at her front window, which is directly opposite the Borden yard, and in full view of both front and side doors, awaiting and watching for the coming of her daughter. She was at this window until 10.55 A. M. The daughter was away, and was expected on the forenoon train. At this point Mrs. Bowen arose, and said "well, she will not come now."

Mrs. Churchill left her house about 11. A. M. and returned between 11.15 and 11.20. While away her mother, Mrs. Buffington, was in the dining room off the kitchen, wheeling to and fro a baby carriage which contained a sick baby; and although the windows were open, she heard no noise.

Mrs. John Gomeley was in her room at No. 90 Second street, window open, heard no noise, saw no one.

At 11.15 A. M. Dennis Sullivan, employed at Allen & Slades, came along and stopped to talk to Mrs. Gomeley. While going up Second street he saw no person leave the yard or go up or down the street on whom he could place suspicion.

Thursday night after supper went to investigate the rumor of a suspicious character who was hanging around upper Second, Ridge, Whipple, Cottage and Middle streets. While out on this we learned of the poison story which is related below. On this and the succeeding night we continued an investigation of all drug stores in the city; but could learn nothing further of Lizzie inquiring from any person other than Eli Bence.

Eli Bence.

Had a lady ask for prussic acid on Wednesday morning August 3rd. When asked for what use, she said "to put on the edge of a seal skin coat." I made no sale. She left the store in a very haughty manner. "No, I do not know her, but think I would know her again, should I see her." After being placed in a position where he could both see and hear Miss Lizzie Borden, he was very positive in identification, not only of her face and general appearance, but also of her voice.

(Doherty & Harrington)

Many sales had been made, and a number of persons refused. A description of those who were refused was obtained, but none resembled the person who called on Bence. However, at P. S. Brown's, a day or two before, a lady requested a sale of poison from clerk Gifford. She was refused. He could give no description of her.

We were on guard at the house from 1.00 A.M. until 9. A.M. Friday. At one oclock the house was all in darkness, and so remained all night. There was no noise until about 6.20 A.M. About 6.30 A.M. Mr. John Morse came to the side door, said "good morning", and spoke about the weather. At 8.30 he came out, and going over to S. H. Miller's, he called Bridget, who stayed there that night. He then went to the P. O., stopped about a

minute, went out and crossed to Geo. E. Howe's where he purchased a two cent stamp. He then returned to the P. O. and at 8:32 A.M. dropped a letter addressed to Wm. A. Davis So. Dartmouth. It bore the words "In haste". On his way home he tried the Daily News door, and it was not open.

Saturday morning August 6. A Alan Morse, employed by Covell & Osborn, had to be located on that day, Thursday. His whereabouts were satisfactory.

Henry H. Carter No. 88 Snell street had a dispute with Mr. Borden about rent and water bill. On this day he was engaged serving a needing breakfast up to 10. A. M. at Mr. Garveys No. 10 Cross street. At 11:00 A.M. he took the train at Ferry street for Stone Bridge. He has paper of credit from A. J. Borden for \$66. for rent, dated Aug. 1st. Monday August 8, 1892. Thom. A. Matherson No. 12 Brownell street reported Chas. Baldwin as saying he could put his hand on the murderer. Baldwin was seen at Smith & Woods tea store. He denied saying so, and said he knew nothing whatever of the case.

Matherson and Baldwin are each given to talk, and so placed very little confidence in what he said. We also know Baldwin has this reputation.

Saturday August 6, 1892.

Mrs. John Gomeley No. 90 Second street.

"Please fix the time?"

"About eleven oclock, I could not say whether it was before or after, first heard of the case from Mrs. Churchill, she ran through house saying, Mr. Borden is murdered."

Mrs. Churchill No. 90 Second street.

"Eleven oclock is the nearest I can fix the time.

Returned from market, saw Miss Lizzie at rear door. I thought she looked somewhat strange, asked her what was the matter. She replied, father has been killed. Please come over. I immediately complied.

When I reached her I said O, Lizzie, Lizzie, where is your mother?

She said, "I don't know."

The relations between Lizzie and the stepmother were not very friendly, so I hear, but have no personal knowledge of it. Yes, I have heard they do not at all times eat from the same table."

Mrs Churchill was at Hudner's market, and from there went directly home, which would take her about five minutes. Wm. Sullivan, a clerk at Hudner's, places the time when she left the store at 11.05 or 11.10.

Miss Mary Gallagher, at McManus' saw Mr. Borden at the corner of Main and Spring streets, just turning up Spring, with a small package in his hand, at 10.15. She remembered the time, for she was just coming down town, and looked up at the City Clock.

Joseph Shortsleeves No 4 Dover street, and James Mather Corner of Rock and Bedford street, carpenters employed on a building of Mr. Bordens', set the time Mr. Borden left them between 10.30 and 10.45. He went toward Spring street.

Mrs. Doctor Bowen.

"Was sitting at the parlor window awaiting the return of my daughter. I concluded she was not coming; got up, went through

the sitting room, looked at the clock which indicated 10.55. Went through the dining room into the next room for a piece of cloth of ten yards, which I wished to measure and cut in two. I had not finished measuring, when the door bell rang violently. I went to the call, and found Mr. Borden's work girl, who wanted the Doctor, who was out. Dr. Bowen returned home, and went to Mr. Borden's at 11.25."

Mrs. Dr. Kelly.

"Left the house to go to the dentist's looked at the clock just before going out, 10.35. Saw Mr. Borden coming around the north west corner of the house, going towards the front door, saw him put a key in the door. He had a small package in his hand. From the way was coming, I think he was at the side door first."

The time when Mrs. Kelly left the house is also fixed by the work girl at 10.35.

(Doherty & Harrington)

Elle M. Gifford No. 38 Franklin street.

"I know nothing personally of the domestic relations of the Borden family; but I have heard much rumor to the effect that they did not get along very pleasantly."

Mrs. Perry Gifford.

"We do sewing for the Borden family. I have heard Lizzie say harsh things of her stepmother. She said she did not and would not dine at the same table. She also said she (Her step-mother) was a horrid old thing. She was very pronounced and out-spoken when referring to Mrs. Borden. This occurred last April."

Miss Ida Gray, No. 27 Whipple street.

Last Friday evening, Aug. 5, while in the horse car, two ladies were talking of Lizzie Borden. One remarked that Lizzie said, when referring to Mrs. Borden, that "she was one of the kind that never die." Who the ladies were, she did not know.

All this from these three ladies was given very reluctantly, and not until they were forced quite hard.

Hiram Harrington.

"When the perpetrator of this foul deed is found, it will be one of the household. I had a long talk with Lizzie yesterday, Thursday, the day of the murder, and I am not at all satisfied with statement or demeanor. She was too solicitous about his comfort, and showed a side of character I never knew or even suspected her to possess.

She helped him off with one coat and on with another, and assisted him in an easy incline on the sofa, and desired to place a afghan over him, and also to adjust the shutters so the light would not disturb his slumber. This is something she could not do, even if she felt; and no one who knows her, could be made believe it. She is very strong willed, and will fight for what she considers her rights. She went to the barn, where she stayed twenty minutes, or half an hour, looking for some lead from which to make sinkers for fishing lines, as she was going to Marion next week."

He spoke about the Ferry street estate being given to the girls, and afterwards being returned. He spoke at some length about her telling about the same story as was published in the News and Globe of Friday evening.

(Doherty & Harrington)

(Continued on Page 23)

The Broken Branch

Terence Duniho

Sunrise - November 13, 1940
Sunset - Saturday, April 6, 2002

How very well I remember that cold Sunday morning of April 4, 2002. Dr. Stefani Koorey had just called, and her words were chilling. Terence Duniho had passed away the day before. It seemed impossible that such a vital, uncompromising, steadfast, and thinking presence could ever be quenched, even by the Grim Reaper himself.

We cannot call the passing of Terence the end of an era, nothing could be further from the truth. If anything, Terence represented the beginning of an era, where fresh thoughts and thinking begin to overcome and overwhelm the old guard. He was in the vanguard of the Internet forces that combine thoughts, talent and the written word into a huge melting pot available to all who are willing to drink in new thoughts and concepts, as well as revere the old.

I first became aware of Terence in May of 2001 when he submitted his first article to the *Lizzie Borden Quarterly*, "Friends From Boyhood: A Police Officer and an Embezzler." (*Lizzie Borden Quarterly*, July 2001, page 7) While the piece shifted from conventional wisdom, his fresh thoughts and detailed marshaling of facts quickly brought him into the forefront of current writers, at least in my mind. My thoughts were buttressed with his next piece. Sharing authorship with the multi-talented Dr. Stefani Koorey, an article was produced about Miss Borden's Inquest testimony that will never be equaled. One of the downstream benefits of this article resulted in the most accurate transcription of Miss Lizzie Borden's inquest testimony existent, available to all on the Internet, at no charge.

Mr. Duniho's interests overflowed into several additional fields. He was active as a career counselor for 22 years, a genealogist, a resume preparer for 24 years, a consultant to organizations for 19 years in team building, conflict resolution and management development, and the owner of *Career Design* for 20 years. He was a vocalist and member of the *Metropolitans Barber Shop Quartet*, *SPEBSQSA*, and the *Narragansett Bay Choral*. Earlier, he was co-founder, co-owner and co-manager of the *Corner-Stone Book Shop* in Plattsburgh, NY, still very much alive.

(Concluded on next page)



MY AIN COUNTRIE

*I am far frae my hame, an' I'm weary aftenwhiles,
For the langed-for hame-bringin an' my Father's welcome smiles
An' I'll ne'er be fu' content, until mine een do see
The gowden gates o' heav'n an' my ain countrie.*

*The earth is flecked wi' flowers, mony'tinted, fresh and gay,
The birdies warble blithely, for my Father made them sae:
But these sights an' these soun's will as naething be to me,
When I hear the angels singin' in my ain countrie.*

*I've his gude word o' promise that some gladsome day, the King
To His ain royal palace His banished Hame will bring;
Wi'een an' wi' hert rinnin' owre, we shall see
The King in His beauty, in oor ain countrie.*

*My sins hae been mony, an' my sorrows hae been sair;
But there they'll never vex me, nor be remembered mair:
For his bluid has made me white, an' His han' shall dry my e'e,
When he brings me hame at last, to my ain countrie.*

*Sae little noo I ken, o' yon blessed, bonnie place,
I only ken its Hame, whaur we shall see His face;
It wad surely be eneuch for ever mair to be
In the glory of His presence, in oor ain countrie.*

*Like a bairn to its mither, a wee birdie to its nest,
I wad fain be gangin' noo, unto my Saviour's breast,
For He gathers in His bosom witless, worthless lambs like me,
An' carries them Himself, to His ain countrie.*

*He is faithfu' that hath promised, an' He'll surely come again,
He'll keep His tryst we' me, at what oor I dinna ken;
But He bids me still to wait, an' be ready aye to be,
To gang at any moment to my ain countrie.*

*Sae I'm watching aye, and singin' o' my hame, as I wait
For the soun'in' o' His fitfa' this side the gowden gate:
God gie His grace to ilka ane wha' listens noo to me,
That we a' may gang in gladness to oor ain countrie.*

Terence had two articles published in the April, 2002 *Lizzie Borden Quarterly*. One analyzed the writings of Arthur Phillips, and the other shared his recent experiences when visiting 92 Second Street for the first time. Sadly, he did not live long enough to see them in print. He had also been working for several years on a book about Miss Lizzie Borden. Part of this work contains a diary that Miss Borden might possibly have written. Terence explained it this way,

"... whatever my imagination suggested that Lizzie might have written under similar circumstances."

On the morning of his overnight stay at Second Street, Terence came down those famous stairs early, and sat in the parlor for about 45 minutes, alone, writing in 'Lizzie's diary,' directed only by the still environment that surrounded him.

"... I've allowed myself to be a conduit for what I can hope are Lizzie's thoughts, what made it into the diary was revealing, especially what came to me about her attitudes, priorities, beliefs and relationships."

The plain truth is that Terence now has all the answers to his eternal puzzle.

A memorial service was held for Terence Wednesday, April 10, 2002, 2:00 p.m. at the Central Baptist Church in Providence, Rhode Island. He left behind his wife, Simone Guenette Duniho of Providence, Rhode Island; his mother, Louise (Brewer) Duniho of Fort Collins, Colorado; two sons, Fergue and Kevin M. Duniho both of Plattsburgh, New York; three brothers, Michael Duniho of Laurel, Maryland; Patrick Duniho of Plattsburgh and Daniel Duniho of Farmington, Maine; and two sisters, Kathleen Johnson of Denver and Sheila Pfister of Fort Collins. To them, and to his many friends and associates, the *Lizzie Borden Quarterly* extends its sincerest sympathy and condolences.

Maynard F. Bertolet

PATRICK H. DOHERTY - THE WITNESS STATEMENTS

(Continued from Page 21)

Monday, August, 8, 1892. Afternoon. Dr. Bowen.

"Mrs. Churchill first told me of Mrs. Borden's death."

Second interview of Mrs. Churchill.

Mrs. Churchill.

"Must I, am I obliged to tell you all?" "Well, if I must, I can't be blamed. O, I wish I had not to do this. I do not like to tell anything of my neighbor; but this is as it is.

When I went over in answer to Lizzies call, I asked O, Lizzie where is your father?

In the sitting room.

Where were you?

I was in the barn looking for a piece of iron.

Where is your mother?

She had a note to go and see someone who is sick. I don't know but they killed her too.

Has any man been to see your father this morning?

Not that I know of. Dr. Bowen is not at home, and I must have a Doctor. I think I heard Mrs. Borden come in. Will I go and get one or find someone who will? Yes. I did so.

(Editor's note: Oops! Once again we ran out of space. There just never seems to be enough to go around! We believe this tribute is important enough to conclude Captain Doherty's witness statements in the next issue.)

PATRICK H. DOHERTY - THE OBITUARY


(Continued from Page 7)

The deceased was a prominent member of Fall River council, No. 86, Knights of Columbus, Fall River Lodge No. 118, B. P. O. E., and was affiliated with the Workmen and Foresters of America. He was none the less active in the Massachusetts Police Association, of which he was a diligent organizer. For a number of years he was identified with it as a member of the executive committee, the meetings of which required his attendance at Boston at frequent intervals. He had an important part, as a member of the committee, in mapping out and aiding to its fruition, the measures which have been of such material benefit to the police departments of this commonwealth, such as two days off a month, etc., and more recently laws which have afforded the police greater protection in the performance of their duty. At the state convention last year, he declined to stand for renomination and this decision was a source of keen regret to all interested in the success of the organization, who appreciated the local man's prominence in the work.

The sympathy of the police department and the community at large, will be extended to the family in their hour of affliction. Captain Doherty is survived by a widow, seven children, four brothers and two sisters. Mrs. Nora Doherty, the widow, is a sister of Former Mayor John T. Coughlin. The surviving children are John W. Doherty, employed in the public buildings department, Mrs. Marguerite Warren, wife of Dr. Thomas F. Warren, the Misses Helene and Grace Doherty, Robert, Frank and Charles Doherty. Two sisters left to mourn his loss are: Mrs. Daniel D. Sullivan and Miss Nora Doherty and four brothers: John and Robert of this city, the latter attached to the Postoffice, and Edward A. and Thomas Doherty of Boston, the former being a special deputy in the state tax commissioner's office, following a long service as a member of the board of assessors here. Among the nephews of the deceased is Representative John F. Doherty of the Ninth district. Funeral services will be held Thursday morning, followed by a requiem mass at St. Joseph's at 9 o'clock.

Acting City Marshal William H. Medley this afternoon completed arrangements for the representation of the police department at the funeral of Captain Patrick H. Doherty, Thursday morning. At the request of deceased two of his brothers, with Officer Thomas Connelly of the local department and Deputy Chief Cash of Taunton, a warm personal friend, will be the bearers. The force will be officially represented by Lieutenants F. T. Barker, Hugh Bogan, John Devine and Jeremiah N. Fahey.

LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY



Volume I, Number 1 ---- Not Available
 Volume I, Number 2 ---- Not Available
 Volume I, Number 3 ---- \$ 15.00
 Volume I, Number 4 ---- \$ 10.00
 Remaining Back Issues - \$ 8.00

BACK ISSUES

LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY

Bristol Community College
 777 Elsbree Street
 Fall River, MA 02720-7391

Non-Profit
 Organization
 U.S. Postage
PAID
 Fall River, MA
 Permit No. 140

Make check or money order payable to the

LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY

For new subscribers either remove the
 label and write your name and address or
 just write to us with the same information.
 Please include your check or money order.

Mail to:

LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY

Dr. Gabriela Schalow Adler - Publisher
 Bristol Community College
 777 Elsbree Street
 Fall River MA 02720-7391

If your label says - **Remaining Issues: 0** - Renew your subscription now!

✂ Cut-out or duplicate coupon and mail today! ☒ Your Choice!

U.S.A. →	1 Year \$18.00 <input type="checkbox"/>	2 Years \$ 30.00 <input type="checkbox"/>
Non U.S.A. →	1 Year \$24.00 <input type="checkbox"/>	2 Years \$ 40.00 <input type="checkbox"/>

Affix mailing label here.

FEB 26 2003

University of Massachusetts
Depository Copy

THE LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY

Volume IX, Number 4

\$6.00

October, 2002

On Miss Borden:

LIZZIE'S TURNCOAT FRIEND

By Michael Martins, Curator
The Fall River Historical Society
and

Dennis A. Binette, Asst. Curator
The Fall River Historical Society

(Editor's note: The "Fall River Historical Society" prints a quarterly newsletter that is distributed to its members and supporters. In the latest issue, Summer 2002, Messrs. Martins and Binette describe an amazing recent acquisition, a photograph of Miss Alice M. Russell! Heretofore, none had been available.

For several years, the Fall River Historical Society has been the LBQ's single most valuable resource for documents and photographs. In addition, their outstanding cooperation has never faltered. This article mirrors that relationship.

Other than in their internal publication, this is a first time printing of that most important photograph. They also granted permission to reprint their accompanying article.

Thank you gentlemen!)

Frank B. Hadley has recently donated a rare and important photograph of Miss Alice M. Russell to the Fall River Historical Society. It is the only photograph of Miss Russell known to exist, depicting the subject as an elderly woman. Miss Russell was the first cousin of the donor's grandmother, Ida Russell. Ida's husband, Dwight Minor, took the photograph at 3:46 pm on September 4,



MISS ALICE MARIA RUSSELL
FALL RIVER HOME FOR AGED PEOPLE
SEPTEMBER 4, 1931

FIRST TIME PRINTING RIGHTS GRANTED TO THE
LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY

PHOTOGRAPH REPRODUCED COURTESY OF
THE FALL RIVER HISTORICAL SOCIETY

1931, with the subject sitting in her comfortably furnished room at the *Home for Aged People* in Fall River. In the mirror of the ornate Victorian bureau can be seen the image of the photographer, standing before a window. The photograph was found by the donor among a collection of family photographs enclosed

in an envelope inscribed "Alice Russell Lizzie's Turncoat Friend" in the hand of Mr. Minor. The reverse of the photograph is inscribed "Alice Maria Russell, Fall River, September 4, 1931." in an unidentified hand. It is interesting to note that the middle name, as it appears on the photograph, is Maria, as it was previously believed that the initial "M" stood for Manley, the maiden surname of her mother.

Born in New Bedford, Massachusetts, in 1852, Alice was the daughter of Frederick W. and Judith (Manley) Russell. She was employed as a clerk for several years in Fall River and later taught sewing in the public school system. In 1908, she was promoted to the position of supervisor of sewing, remaining in that capacity until her retirement five years later. A Fall River resident for most of her life, she spent several years living next door to the Borden family on Second Street. In 1930, Miss Russell moved into the *Home for Aged People* on Highland Avenue, remaining in residence there until her death on January 21, 1941.

A friend of both the Misses Borden, Alice Russell was among the first summoned to 92 Second Street following the murders of Andrew and Abby Borden, remaining there until the following Monday as company to the sisters. She testified at the inquest and preliminary

(Continued on Page 12)

THE LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY

A Different Menu:

On The Table This Issue:

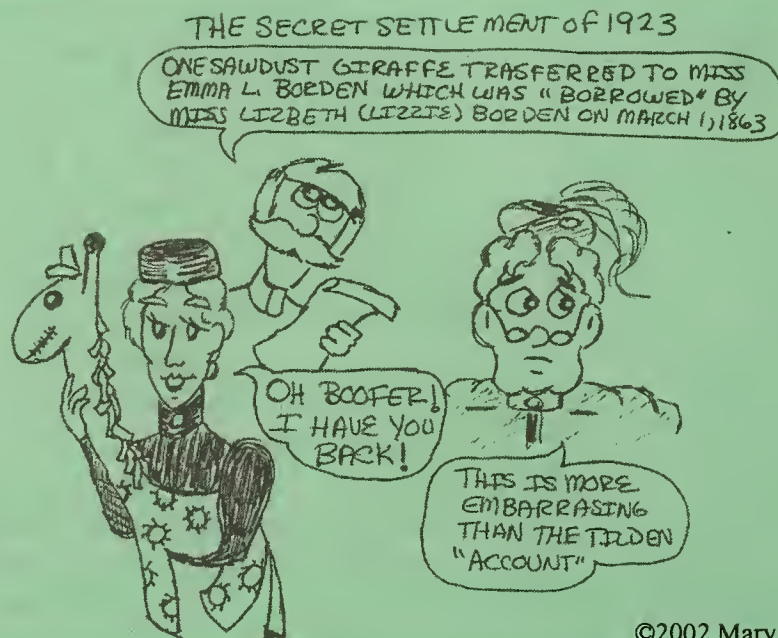
- Lizzie's Turncoat Friend* Page 1.
By Michael Martins, Curator - *Fall River Historical Society* and
Dennis Binette, Assistant Curator - *Fall River Historical Society*
- Lizzie On Line - LizzieAndrewBorden.com* Page 6.
By Stefani Koorey
- In Pursuit of the "Proceedings"* Page 7.
By Sherry Chapman
- A Friendship Destroyed* Page 8.
By Paul Dennis Hoffman
- The Trial Testimony of Alice M. Russell - Part I* Page 9.
Permission Granted by the Massachusetts Superior Court
- Patrick H. Doherty - The Witness Statements - Concluded* Page 10.
Permission Granted by the Massachusetts Superior Court

Standard Fare:



- BIBLIOGRAPHIC BORDEN** Page 4.
By Lisa Zawadzky
- LIZBITS** Page 5.
By Neilson Caplain
- PRINCESS MAPLECROFT** Page 2.
By Mary T. Cusack
- LETTERS TO THE EDITOR** Page 3.
By Marilynne K. Roach

PRINCESS MAPLECROFT



©2002 Mary T. Cusack

THE LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY

Volume IX, Number 4, October, 2002

Publisher Gabriela Schalow Adler
Editor Maynard F. Bertolet
Copy Editor Jeannine H. Bertolet
Business Manager Roberta Gonneville
Photographer Jeannine H. Bertolet

Staff Contributors:

Neilson Caplain
Mary T. Cusack
Stefani Koorey
Lisa Zawadzky

Current Issue Contributors:

Dennis Binette
Sherry Chapman
Paul Dennis Hoffman
Michael Martins
Stefani Koorey

Printing and Mailing:

TCI Press
21 Industrial Court
Seekonk, MA 02771-2016

The *Lizzie Borden Quarterly* is published four times a year on January 15, April 15, July 15 and October 15. Distribution is by U.S. mail. Current one-year USA mail subscriptions cost \$18.00 for one year and \$30.00 for two years. Non-USA subscriptions are \$24.00 for one year and \$40.00 for two years. The Editor reserves the right to edit and/or revise submissions, without changing intent. If possible, please submit articles on floppy disks in any PC format. To be considered, submissions must be received 60 days prior to the publication date and include the author's name, address and telephone number. Advertising rates are \$50.00 for a quarter-page, \$100.00 for a half-page and \$200.00 for a full-page.

Send all subscription payments to:

Lizzie Borden Quarterly
Dr. Gabriela Schalow Adler - Publisher
Bristol Community College
777 Elsbree Street
Fall River, MA 02720-7391

Send all *LBQ* submissions,
letters to the editor and
address changes to:

Lizzie Borden Quarterly
Mr. Maynard F. Bertolet - Editor
2 Blancoyd Road
Merion Station, PA 19066-1802
Telephone and Fax Numbers: (610) 664-2247
E-Mail: Bertolet@msn.com

Lizzie Borden Quarterly
(ISSN 1069-4900)

©2002 Bristol Community College
All rights reserved.

Unauthorized duplication prohibited by law.

MISS LIZBETH BORDEN'S EDITOR SPEAKS

We have a lot of news for this issue. First of all, let's all welcome Dr. Stefani Koorey to our permanent staff. Here in the 21st century, the Internet has become one of our greatest research sources and a purveyor of mass amounts of information. Dr. Koorey has built a website dedicated to the Lizzie Borden Legend, and there is nothing quite like it in any part of the world. What better way for us to be informed and educated about cyberspace as it pertains to Miss Lizzie Borden?

Dr. Koorey will take over page six with her column "Lizzie Online." To begin her tenure, she has written a major piece that describes her pathway to success. She has been a most valued associate and it is with deep sincerity I take this opportunity to welcome her on board!

The *Fall River Historical Society* has done it again! A most important Lizzie Borden related photograph has been donated to them. It is of Miss Alice M. Russell. Heretofore, there has never been a photograph of Miss Russell. To the best of my knowledge, the only facial likeness of her was a sketch drawn by an artist working for the *Illustrated American Magazine* during her testimony as a prosecution witness against Miss Borden and published in their June, 1893 issue. (Please see page 8 for a reproduction.) We sincerely appreciate their kindness and generosity in making it possible for us to print it for our readership.

The photograph had only been printed previously in the *FRHS* Quarterly newsletter distributed to *FRHS* members and supporters, hence, this is a first commercial printing. In addition, we are pleased to reprint their documentary article describing the events surrounding the photograph.

Our Publisher, Dr. Gabriela Schalow Adler found a box labeled *Lizzie Borden Quarterly* in a musty corner at Bristol Community College. While burrowing in said box, she found 9 copies of Volume 1, Number 2. This was only the second issue ever printed and has been out of print for years! We have decided to let them go to our subscribers for \$17.50 each. You'd better hurry though ... first come - first served.

Unfortunately, due to reasons of space and the Alice Russell cache, we were unable to print the article by Messrs. Caplain and Rebello. Just remember, patience is a virtue and all things come to him who waits! We fully intend however to make up for our lapse and bring the piece to you in the first issue of 2003!

Once again, please check your address label. If you see **Remaining Issues: 0**, renew your subscription as soon as possible. This will eliminate the need for us to send you a reminder notice, and save us some money besides!

Maynard F. Bertolet

LETTERS TO THE EDITOR

Mr. Bertolet:

When we worked on the poison article the other year, you asked me to let you know when my book on the Salem witch trials would be published. Well, at long last and after several production delays, it is currently being printed and is supposed to be an actual book by early September (although the official publication date has been listed as 31 October - Halloween).

The Salem Witch Trials: a Day-by-Day Chronicle of a Community Under Siege
Cooper Square Press

It's strange to think of this huge 27 year project - my life's work - as finished. It's odd too that this subject and the Borden case intrigue not only me, but have obsessed so many, so thoroughly. The two subjects have certain points in common. Both seemed morbid and sensational at first. Partly true perhaps, but both have received scholarly attention and become pretty nearly respectable.

Random thought turns up more similarities. Both involve women defendants, "uppity women" at that (though men were tried and hanged as witches in 1692 as well) in trials of their respective centuries. Both have passed into folklore that has generated its' own erroneous version of the events. Both are events that everyone has heard of even when what they heard is possibly wrong. (Lizzie's lawyer referred to the Salem trials - in an anachronistic play for sympathy - when he assured the jury that Massachusetts no longer "burned" witches.) Both have become symbolic events that frequently overshadow the real people who were actually involved. But both have loyal followings who study the minutiae of events.

Some similarities are just plain weird. The original founders and creators of the *Salem Witch Museum* (now under new management) were the same firm that proposed constructing a similar *Lizzie Borden Museum* in Fall River. The old TV show *Bewitched* has several links: Elizabeth Montgomery played the fictitious witch Samantha Stevens and played Lizzie Borden in the TV movie; Agnes Moorhead played Samantha's witch mother and played Lizzie Borden in a radio play; Paul Lynde and Alice Ghostly played some of Samantha's more eccentric witch relatives, and also sang in the group that premiered the song "Fall River Hoe Down" (a. k. a. "You can't chop your Poppa up in Massachusetts").

All of which adds up to a lot of nothing but it sure does intrigue.

Sincerely,

Marilynne K. Roach

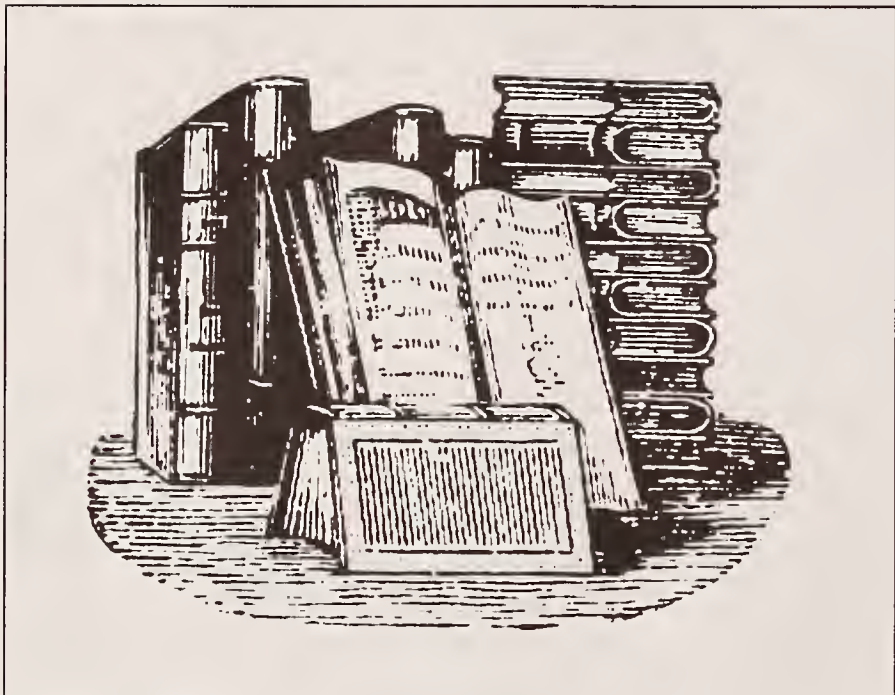
(Editor's note: Many may recall Ms. Roach. The 'LBQ' published its' first colored picture in the July, 2000 issue. The accompanying article, "Poisonous Thoughts," was written by Ms. Roach, and being a professional writer and artist, she not only wrote the article, but painted the picture as well! She has given us permission for an additional printing of her art work in a subsequent issue.

Her book should be grandiose. I look forward to reading it. For those interested in a bit more detail, please see page 23.)

THE BIBLIOGRAPHIC BORDEN

by Lisa Zawadzki

Hello again, loyal readers. It's been a lovely summer here at Bibliographic Borden headquarters. I hope everyone enjoyed the 4th. (July or August, take your pick). Once again, I have been searching high and low for new things to present to my loyal readers. Since no one has been kind enough to write a full length book for me this quarter, I thought I'd delve deep into the Bibliographic Borden archives. So, away we go.



The New Sensation: I Have Found Lizzie Borden's Hatchet
Daily News [1893?]

When I said I was going deep into the archives, I wasn't kidding. This little clipping has no date or source written on it. Not to brag, but I'm usually pretty meticulous in my scrapbook record keeping, so it probably never had one to begin with. But, for the life of me, I can't remember where or from whom I obtained it. If anyone has a clue, please let me know.

The article was apparently written at the time of the trial, for it mentioned the exclusion of the Bence testimony and how badly the case was going for the prosecution. There was reference to the *Daily Times*, but no city was ever given.

At any rate, this article contained the sensational news of the discovery of "Lizzie Borden's hatchet" on a property adjacent to the Borden's. Some boys were playing and their ball ended up on the flat roof of the barn. When one of the children went up to retrieve the toy, he found an axe. Of course, the young man immediately cried out that he had just discovered the murder weapon.

The axe was said to be rusty and weatherworn, but also had the appearance of having been little used. There were pronounced spots on the handle, but it could not be told if these were blood spots. The police had seen the axe, which was in the possession of the finder's father. Much attention was given to the position of the barn, which bordered the Borden property. It was noted that this would have been a handy escape route for the murderer and an obvious place to dispose of a murder weapon.

Blashfield, Jean F.

Most Famous 'Murderer' Who Was Never Found Guilty

In "Hellraisers, Heroines, and Holy Women"
New York : St. Martin's Press, 1981:71

This was a fun book, as the loyal reader likely deduced from the title. Naturally, when someone writes a compendium of fascinating women, Lizzie Borden must be included. Starting off with the mandatory bit of poetry, this short piece took for granted Lizzie's guilt.

The author provided a streamlined version of the case and pointed out that Miss Borden was acquitted. However, it was felt that this decision was probably reached only because of the accused's gender and the mandatory death sentence that came with a guilty verdict. The author Robert Sullivan, who wrote *Goodbye Lizzie Borden*, was quoted to back up this stance.

Rogers, Agnes

Miss Lizzie Borden

In *Women Are Here to Stay: The Durable Sex in Its Infinite Variety Through a Half a Century of American Life*

New York : Harper & Brothers, 1949:60

If you thought the above item was short, this piece makes it look like *The Oxford English Dictionary*. The title of it was longer than the actual article. Again, this item was from a collection of little morsels about famous and extraordinary women. A more compact retelling of the case I cannot recall. It spoke of the occurrence of the murders in one sentence. The next sentence noted the suspicion of Miss Lizzie, her subsequent arrest, and the trial. The last sentence noted she was not convicted, and went on to recount the (of course) famous rhyme. If only (some) other authors since could have taken notice of this wonderful compactness of prose, all loyal readers could have been spared the reading of many a long-winded writer.

Mitchell, Edwin Valentine

It's An Old New England Custom

New York: Vanguard Press, 1946:14-15

This was an amusing bit of fun. Mitchell devoted a part of his chapter "To Have Pie for Breakfast" on the amazingly awful morning meal at the Borden house. Anyone who has lived through a New England summer, as I just have, can share Mitchell's disgust at the Borden menu.

Picture it. It's the middle of the summer. (I know it wasn't as hot as they say, but it's still summer). Could you face yesterday's mutton, both in solid and soup form? How about some johnnycakes, coffee, and cookies? Johnnycakes aren't like pancakes. I'm sorry, they're nasty. But I'd still eat them quicker than that mutton soup. Miss Lizzie had the right idea, partaking only of the cookies and coffee. I think Mr. Mitchell summed it up quite correctly when he stated that this breakfast was "probably the most hideous in New England annals". I have to say I agree. I want pie for breakfast.

That's all for now. See you in the next issue.

LIZBITS

NINE PINE STREET

By Neilson Caplain

She was dynamite at the box office, the greatest star in the early days of film-making. David Belasco called her the most beautiful blond in the world. John Barrymore paid her the ultimate compliment for an actor. He said she was the most exquisite, enchanting actress he had ever seen. And so it was with hushed anticipation that the audience awaited Lillian Gish's appearance in the play *Nine Pine Street*.

The opening was on a balmy spring evening, May 31, 1933, at the Longacre Theater on Broadway in New York City. It was one of Miss Gish's first performances in a live acting play. The authors were John Colton and Carlton Miles, based on a play by William Miles and Donald Blackwell.

Lillian took the part of a renamed Lizzie Borden, guilty of murdering her father because of the marriage to his second wife. The action took place in New Bedford, the city where Lizzie's court appearance took place in real life. The time is set in the years 1886 to 1907. In addition to the star, there were fifteen supporting actors appearing in six scenes.

Unfortunately *Nine Pine Street* was not a smashing success. It ran for less than two months, only forty-nine performances. Nevertheless the critics acclaimed the acting by Miss Gish. One critic wrote, "when she comes down the stairs, after the first utterly noiseless murder, the sad-iron wrapped in her guilty apron, she is an appalling sight, wracked, and almost nauseated at her own deed ... at the second slaying it is with an overwhelming sense of an inescapable fate. It is an extraordinary performance, taut, almost trance-like in its power, and oppressive, with a sort of sultry brilliance."

It is interesting to note that the program booklet for *Nine Pine Street* highlighted four full-page advertisements for cigarettes. Each featured young ladies with cigarette in hand. In those days it was fashionable for women to smoke and the ads appealed to a growing market. The cover is adorned with a wistful picture of the star. She appears not unlike the real Lizzie. More than ten years later Gish was still thinking of a movie based on the play. Unfortunately, such plans were never brought to fruition.

Lillian Gish penned two autobiographies. Several others told the story of her life in published books. She was featured in magazine articles and numerous interviews. There is no dearth of information surrounding the career of this actress.

She was born in Springfield, Ohio, October 4, 1893. Her sister, Dorothy, also a well-known actress of the day, was born five years later. Their father was James Leigh DeGuiche, later changed to Gish. Their mother was Mary Robinson McDonnell. Separated from his wife, James Gish suffered from alcoholism. He died in an institution for the insane when only 36 years of age.

In the early days Mrs. Gish supported her two girls by acting and later by opening a candy store, and finally as a manager for a catering business. In return, for the rest of her life she received close, caring and loving attention from her two daughters.

Lillian began her acting career as a youngster, barely nine years old. Throughout her long professional life it is said she rarely missed a day because of illness or egomania. With her sister Dorothy she played the innocent waif buffeted by cruel circumstances.



... THE COVER IS ADORNED WITH A WISTFUL PICTURE OF THE STAR ...

LILLIAN GISH IN *NINE PINE STREET*

THE OFFICIAL PROGRAM FOR *NINE PINE STREET*
REPRODUCED COURTESY OF THE NEILSON CAPLAIN COLLECTION

Around 1913 she went to Hollywood where her roles were frail and saintly victims in the one-reel melodramas that were very popular at the time.

Having caught the eye of the noted director, D.W. Griffith she was given more important parts to play. In the year 1912 she acted in no less than thirteen movies, the following year in sixteen. Her career had a jump-start with her part in *Birth of a Nation*. Despite its rampant racism, not unusual before the outbreak of the first World War, that film became an instant success. In 1915 it was brought to Broadway and ran an unprecedented forty-four weeks.

With Griffith she was launched to great stardom through the twenties and world-wide acclaim the rest of her life. Griffith was her mentor and her great love. She remained his friend and defender, even during his decline as a director in the nineteen thirties and his encroaching alcoholism.

(Continued on Page 13)

LIZZIE ON LINE - LizzieAndrewBorden.COM

By Stefani Koorey

(Editor's note: For several issues we have extolled the virtues of Dr. Stefani Koorey's website LizzieAndrewBorden.com. Superlatives cannot begin to describe its contents. The good news is that Dr. Koorey agreed to write an article about her amazing achievement. There is no bad news with this lady.

For some time now we have watched the shape of information evolve. It has passed through the written word, radio for sound and television for sound and pictures. Today, an almost inexhaustible supply of data can be found on the Internet ... and ... today is tomorrow ... On the Internet you have all three modes of communication, the printed word, sounds and pictures, coming together on a single page. Truly, tomorrow has arrived.

Dr. Koorey has culled the most important Borden related documents and converted them into digital copies available on a CD. For details, please see her advertisement on page 23.

I do believe that much of the future of the Lizzie Borden saga, and perhaps, even the "Lizzie Borden Quarterly" itself, may very well lie in cyberspace. To this end, we enthusiastically welcome Dr. Koorey to her permanent column on page six, "Lizzie on Line."

Surfing the web is rather easy, once you learn how to turn on a computer and use a browser to weave your way around it. As you bounce around from site to site, clicking on a link here to go to a new page there, the architecture of the Internet disappears, replaced by whatever momentary whim or query you might have. You may have started surfing with a specific goal in mind, but a peripheral issue, a flashing ad, a sideways memory or immediate want can easily distract you. The great good thing about the Internet is that it is set up exactly like the way a person's brain works - a veritable web of ideas, one thought leading to another, to another, to another. It is not linear. It is not ordered. It is not predictable.

Designing a web site for accessibility and ease of use is not an easy task. Besides the consideration that goes into choosing a web design program that is both affordable and user friendly,¹ learning how to use the software takes a considerable amount of time. Only after the program is mastered can the design process begin. Luckily, there are dozens of books on web design, hundreds of web sites offering suggestions and tips, and book stores that will allow you to sit at a table, drink a large cup of coffee, and read undisturbed for hours on end. But the very best way to learn about design, in my opinion, is to surf the web and bookmark the sites that appeal to you in some way. Sifting through these finds and figuring out the why of their appeal is rather fun and an entirely useful exercise.

Studies have shown that people do not read web sites as they would a book, from left to right, top to bottom, beginning to end. Rather, the viewer, who may or may not be looking for something particular on any given page, scans a web page, eyes darting like a pinball machine. This is where effective design becomes vital, steering the viewer and piquing interest through page layout, highlighted text, font size, color, and images. An overcrowded



STEFANI KOOREY, Ph.D.

LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY STAFF MEMBER
"LIZZIE ON LINE"

web page is more likely to deter visitors than invite them to explore further. The average person spends less than 15 seconds scanning a web page, and less than ten minutes navigating any given web site. Ninety-five percent of the time a web surfer uses online is spent at sites they visited at least four times in the past.² Helping the visitor make the most of those precious minutes is what effective web design is all about.

Web design must take the potential user into consideration - their demographics, interests, and, most importantly, the age of their computer's operating system. Older operating systems cannot read more modern web code,³ thereby making some sites impossible to view by certain users. Advice columns suggest that while your site must have a modern feel it cannot, unfortunately, incorporate up-to-the-minute technologies (what I call bells and whistles) or you risk barring many thousands of potential visitors from access. Keeping it simple while interesting, then, is the goal.

When I thought about the design for the first version of LizzieAndrewBorden.com, all I knew for certain was that I didn't want it to look or feel like any other Lizzie Borden/unsolved murder/crime web site. I didn't want any dripping blood, dark Victorian background images, or a long narrative explanation introducing Lizzie and the crimes. I wanted to break completely away from the morbid, the scary, the gross, the creepy, as well as the visually boring. Lizzie deserved more than that.

(Continued on Page 14)

IN PURSUIT OF THE "PROCEEDINGS"

By Sherry Chapman

(Editor's note: We should all know Ms. Chapman by now for her witty sayings that grace our pages from time to time. We call her our resident humorist. She is a professional writer and it shows with her talented and skillfully written pieces.

Like most of us, she has built a library over the years of Lizzie Borden material. This article tells of the twists and turns taken by her while pursuing a copy of "Proceedings." Her cover letter reads in part, "... as a Bordenite, when I unraveled this story, I felt that it would be a dis-service to us all if it were not made available to all those who study the case."

Oh yes, lest we forget, the author of "Proceedings," Professor Jules R. Rycebusch, was our former publisher, founder of the "Lizzie Borden Quarterly" and chair of the 1992 Lizzie Borden Conference at Bristol Community College in Fall River, Massachusetts, "The legend 100 years after the crime."

I was feeling pretty good about the Lizzie library I had collected over the years. There sits 'Rebello' (my pride and joy), along with the 'Sourcebook', the 'Casebook', Pearson, Spiering, Victoria Lincoln, Arnold Brown, Evan Hunter and Elizabeth Engstrom. 'The Knowlton Papers' is on a partial shelf, waiting for its friend 'The Hilliard Papers' to join it. Umm ... Dance of Death? Got it. Got real lucky last month and found a volume of 'Victorian Vistas'. There are others, and as with children I love them all the same though they are each separate entities. And, like when your youngest gets so old, I yearned for another. As with most of my library, this would be a planned acquisition. I even had the name picked out: "Proceedings, Lizzie Borden Conference, Bristol Community College, Fall River, Massachusetts, August 2-6, 1992", by Jules Rycebusch (Editor).

I yearned for the feeling of being with 'new book' again. The expectant reader anxiously awaiting the mailman daily. Would it come today? Or would it be another week? Relaxing after its delivery on the couch or bed, enjoying many hours of bonding, just me and my newbie, the discomfort of the prior weeks would be forgotten with the welcomed new arrival.

The search began. I had seen "The Proceedings" on the web before, always at a price that was a little too steep for a writer (isn't it strange that we can write but can't afford to buy books? We should lobby for ID cards that get us anything in print at deep discounts.) Prices for the book were starting at about \$150. I wanted the book. I thought of Lizzie. That's it, I thought. I will go fishing. But I need not go all the way to Marion.

Someone had one on Half.com for \$125. Amazon.com had four, all used, all said to be in 'good condition' for \$157.50, \$194.00, another at \$194.00 and one for \$310.28. I moved a little further up the stream.

Bumping into the Lizzie Borden Bed & Breakfast/Museum site, I visited the virtual gift shop. They too advertised the book I wanted. But their price was listed as \$25.00. Unreal, I thought. But I called anyway.

Yes, they had the book. And yes, it was \$25. I was amazed and told Sally McGinn (mother of B & B owner, Martha McGinn) what prices I was finding on the web. Was it out of print, I asked. Not that she knew of. She was just going to pick up a supply of

The legend 100 years after the crime— A conference on the Lizzie Borden case

Bristol Community College, Fall River, MA
August 3-5, 1992



PROCEEDINGS

IN PURSUIT OF ...

EDITED BY JULES R. RYCEBUSCH
©1993 BRISTOL COMMUNITY COLLEGE
FALL RIVER MASSACHUSETTS

KING PHILIP PUBLISHING COMPANY
PORTLAND, ME 04103

them that afternoon. I put my order in for one and promised to call her with any information I could find out about this. Why the high prices when the book is still available? Was there a rip-off artist out loose among us in our Victorian Fall River world? Where are the Pinkertons when you need them?

Strangely, a few weeks after I talked to Sally McGinn, Amazon.com changed their listings of "The Proceedings" from "out of print" to "out of stock". I don't know what it meant, if anything, but I was intrigued. I was going to track this down. As Lizzie said, "I want to know the truth." I felt like Diane Sawyer!

After many hours of fruitless searching on the web, it finally dawned on me to contact the publisher, Robert Flynn, at King Philip Publishing in Maine. Is the book out of print? How many copies are left? Mr. Flynn responded promptly. He told me that the total produced was 1,500 copies and all copies were shipped to Bristol Community College. They should be able to tell me how many are left, he added.

Contacting the bookstore at the college, I was informed that they have no copies left. The clerk I spoke to remembered about three years ago putting the last of them out with bright clearance stickers on them. Out of print? Yes. But unavailable?

(Continued on Page 15)

A FRIENDSHIP DESTROYED

Alice M. Russell and the Lizzie Borden Murder Case

By Paul Dennis Hoffman

(Editor's note: We are pleased to welcome back Dr. Hoffman to these pages. His articles are always well-thought-out, aptly presented, and well-written. His book on the subject, "Yesterday in Old Fall River" lists the names of those associated with the Borden case and includes a short biography for each. A most valuable reference work indeed! We rejoice that Professor Hoffman has overcome a spate of health problems and are pleased to see his name in print again.)

Alice Manley Russell was a close friend of both Emma and Lizzie Borden. She had known the Bordens for 12 years before the murders of Andrew and Abby and had lived next door to them at 96 Second Street until the family of Dr. Michael Kelly purchased the house shortly before the murders occurred.

Russell moved to a smaller house on Borden Street between Second and Third Streets, just around the corner from the Borden residence. She still kept in touch with the Borden sisters and they all remained friends. With the exception of the Borden family doctor and neighbor, Dr. Seabury Bowen, Alice Russell was the first person Lizzie sent for after she discovered the body of her father in the sitting room.

Russell was a witness at all four legal hearings concerning the crimes: the inquest during the second week in August, 1892, the preliminary hearing at the end of August, the grand jury proceedings in November of that year and the final trial in June, 1893, where she was a witness for the prosecution. Alice Russell's testimony, especially before the grand jury, destroyed the friendship between her and the Borden sisters. After the trial Russell was never again a guest of either Borden sister. At the grand jury hearing, Alice Russell brought up information concerning the burning of a dress by Lizzie Borden the Sunday after the murders.

When Lizzie Borden first discovered the disfigured corpse of her father on the sitting room couch, she sent the maid, Bridget Sullivan, across the street to fetch Dr. Bowen. After Bridget returned to the house a few minutes later, Lizzie sent her around the corner to get Alice Russell.

Later that day when Assistant City Marshal John Fleet was interviewing Lizzie in her bedroom, Alice was present and urged Lizzie to tell Fleet of certain incidents Lizzie had not yet mentioned. Specifically Russell suggested that Lizzie tell Fleet of an argument Lizzie said she had overheard between her father and a prospective tenant two weeks earlier concerning the use the tenant wanted to make of a retail space in the Borden Building, and that just the day before, Lizzie had confided to Russell that she believed enemies might want to harm Andrew.

Alice Russell slept in the elder Bordens bedroom the night of the murders and stayed through that weekend to comfort Emma and Lizzie and keep them company. On Saturday, August 6 she was one of the few mourners allowed to attend the funeral of the Bordens at 92 Second Street. Lizzie and Emma, Dr. and Mrs. Bowen, Mr. and Mrs. Charles J. Holmes, Frank Almy, Adelaide Churchill, John Vinnicum Morse and ministers Edwin A. Buck and Dr. Thomas Adams were also present.

On Sunday, August 7, Russell made breakfast for the others



ALICE M. RUSSELL

SKETCHED ON JUNE 8, 1893 FOR THE
ILLUSTRATED AMERICAN MAGAZINE

REPRODUCED COURTESY OF THE FALL RIVER HISTORICAL SOCIETY

who stayed in the house on Sunday morning. After the dishes were cleared that morning, Alice saw Lizzie with a dark dress in her hands near the kitchen stove. She said nothing as Lizzie began ripping the garment apart. Alice then left the kitchen and Lizzie fed the dress into the stove. Russell shortly re-entered the kitchen and warned Lizzie not to let anyone see her burning the dress. Later that day, Alice was interviewed by Pinkerton Agency detective O.M. Hanscom of Boston but neglected to tell him of the dress-burning incident.

The next day, Monday, August 8 Alice told Lizzie that she had remembered her omission, felt guilty, and told Hanscom about the dress. Then Alice said to Lizzie, "It was the worst thing that could be done." Lizzie replied to her, "Why didn't you tell me? Why did you let me do it?"

Alice Russell's most important testimony as a witness was that given before the grand jury in special session on December 1, 1892. After the grand jury concluded its duties, Alice requested an extra day to tell of the dress. Before Russell's testimony, it was possible the grand jury would have concluded that there was not enough evidence against Lizzie Borden to warrant a trial. After her statement about the burning of the dress however, the grand jury voted 20-1 for the indictment of Lizzie Borden on December 2, 1892. The information that Russell disclosed about the dress had not previously been heard at the inquest or the preliminary hearing and that testimony probably destroyed the close personal relationship that she had with Emma and Lizzie.

(Continued on Page 16)

ALICE M. RUSSELL - THE TRIAL TESTIMONY

PERMISSION TO TRANSCRIBE OFFICIAL BORDEN TRIAL TRANSCRIPT EXCERPTS WAS GRANTED TO THE LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY ON FEBRUARY 11, 2000
PERMISSION WAS GRANTED BY THE OFFICE OF JUDGE SUSAN DEL VECCHIO, CHIEF JUSTICE OF THE MASSACHUSETTS SUPERIOR COURT

(Editor's note: Continuing with our Alice M. Russell emphasis, we are pleased to bring you the initial installment of her complete trial testimony. It took place on the fourth day of the trial, Friday, June 8, 1893 and begins on page 373 of the original trial transcript.)

We gratefully acknowledge the talents and efforts of Mr. Harry Widdows from Spartanburg, South Carolina for the conversion of the original trial transcript into digital text, which enables us to bring it to you.)

ALICE M. RUSSELL, Sworn

Q. (By Mr. Moody.) Your name is Alice M. Russell?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And you live in Fall River, do you?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. How long have you lived in Fall River?

A. I don't know how long I have lived there.

Q. Well, a good many years?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. You are unmarried, I believe?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. At some time did you live in the house now occupied by Dr. Kelly?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. How long ago did you live there, about how long?

A. Two years ago last October.

Q. You moved away?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. How long had you lived there before that time?

A. Just eleven years.

Q. And of course during all that time the Bordens had occupied the house next north?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. You were acquainted with them well?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. All of the family?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Mr. Borden, Mrs. Borden, Miss Emma Borden, and Miss Lizzie Borden?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Now I will have to ask you to speak a little louder, Miss Russell. Where on the 4th of August, or on the first part of August of last year, did you live? On what street in Fall River?

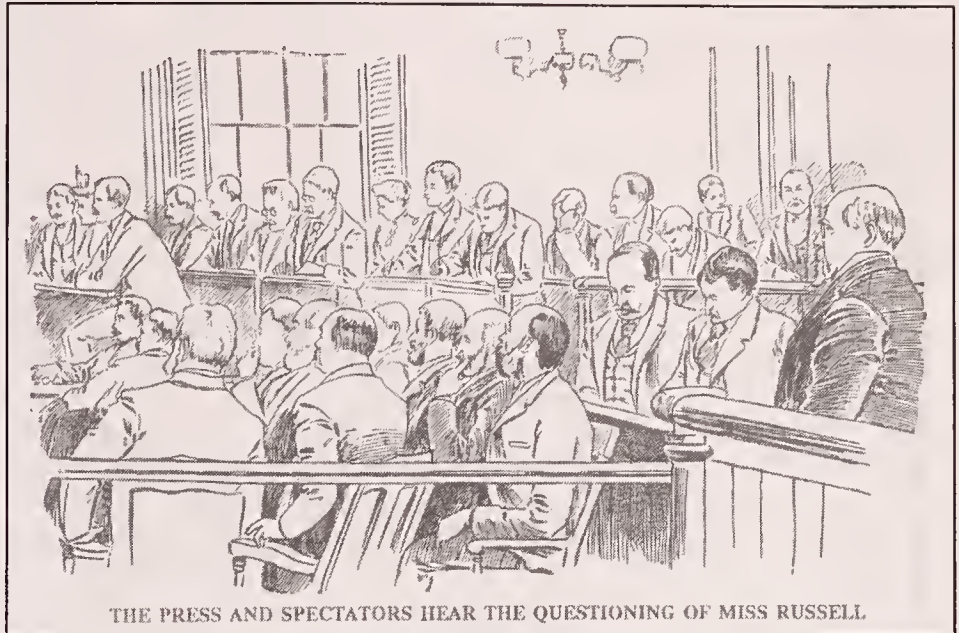
A. Borden Street.

Q. The number of the house on Borden Street was what?

A. 33.

Q. Is that a house not far from the corner of Second Street?

A. Yes, sir.



THE PRESS AND SPECTATORS HEAR THE QUESTIONING OF MISS RUSSELL

NEW BEDFORD JUNE 8, 1893

Q. The small house between the corner of Borden and Second Streets and the bake shop; is that it?

A. No, sir.

Q. Well, describe the house that you live in?

A. Between Third and Fourth Streets on Borden Street.

Q. And near by a bake shop?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you occasionally have calls from the prisoner; did she come to your house?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you go to her house?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. When you called at her house where did she receive you, in what part of the house?

A. Upstairs, in what is called the guest room.

Q. Did she use that for a sitting-room as you were there, --- the guest room?

A. As I was there.

Q. Now I will call your attention, if you please, to a visit she made to you upon the Wednesday night of August 3 of last year. Did she make such a visit?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. About what time did she make it?

A. I am not sure; I think about seven.

Q. Some time in the evening, was it?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did she come alone or did some one else come with her?

A. Alone, as far as I saw.

(Continued on Page 16)

PATRICK H. DOHERTY - THE WITNESS STATEMENTS - CONCLUDED

(Editor's note: In the last issue, July, 2002, we concentrated on items and issues surrounding the life of Police Officer Captain Patrick Doherty, as they interfaced with the Lizzie Borden murder case. As a part of that issue, his transcribed witness statements were presented. They were not completed due to lack of space. This segment concludes the witness statements that are associated with Captain Doherty.)

Second interview of Mrs. Churchill.

Mrs. Churchill.

"Must I, am I obliged to tell you all?" "Well, if I must, I can't be blamed. O, I wish I had not to do this. I do not like to tell anything of my neighbor; but this is as it is.

When I went over in answer to Lizzie's call, I asked O, Lizzie where is your father?

In the sitting room.

Where were you?

I was in the barn looking for a piece of iron.

Where is your mother?

She had a note to go and see someone who is sick. I don't know but they killed her too.

Has any man been to see your father this morning?

Not that I know of. Dr. Bowen is not at home, and I must have a Doctor. I think I heard Mrs. Borden come in. Will I go and get one or find someone who will? Yes. I did so.

When I returned the first thing I recollect she (Lizzie) said is, O, I shall have to go to the cemetery myself. No, the undertaker will do that, was my reply. Then Dr. Bowen, Geo. Allen and Charles Sawyer came in. When Dr. Bowen had seen Mr. Borden, he asked me to come into the sitting room and see him, but I declined, and said I would not, I saw him this morning, and he looked so nice, I do not care about seeing him now. The Doctor then went out. Lizzie said, I think father must have an enemy, for we were all sick.

When the Doctor returned, he asked for a sheet. Bridget Sullivan, the work girl, was afraid to go up stairs alone, so I went with her. Lizzie said we would find the sheets in the dressing room, which is off of Mrs. Borden's room. I think we waited for a key to Mrs. Borden's room, and I think Dr. Bowen went into the sitting room to get it. If I am not mistaken, he first brought out a bunch, but the one wanted was not among them; so he went in again, and returned with a single key. We then went up stairs, and Bridget asked me if two would be enough. I said I think so, one will cover a person. But we brought down two, and gave them to Dr. Bowen. He covered Mr. Borden, and then went out.

Lizzie requested the Doctor to send a telegram to her sister Emma, but not to tell her the facts, for the lady whom she is staying with is old and feeble, and may be disturbed.

Lizzie then said I wish somebody would go up stairs and try to find Mrs. Borden. So Bridget and I started. I think she led the way. We went up the front stairs, but I only went far enough to clear my eyes above the second floor. The door to the spare room is on the north side of this hall, and was open. I turned my head to the left, and through this door I could see under the bed of this



PATRICK H. DOHERTY
AUGUST 10, 1859 - JUNE 28, 1915

PHOTOGRAPH REPRODUCED COURTESY OF THE BEAU DOHERTY FAMILY
©2002 ROBERT EDWARD DOHERTY, JR.

room. On the north side of the bed, on the floor, I saw what I thought to be a prostrate body. There was not much light in the room, so I could not distinguish clearly, but I knew the object was more than a mat. I felt certain it was Mrs. Borden. I then rushed down stairs, and entering the dining room, I doubled myself up, and uttered an exclamation of fright. Miss Alice Russell asked, is there another? I said yes, they killed her too, or something to that effect.

I then informed Charles Sawyer of the fact. He made some exclamation. Dr. Bowen then returned, and I told him Mrs. Borden was up stairs in the spare room. he left the sitting room, I think to go up stairs. I then thought I would go home, and said, Lizzie, if there is anything you wish me to do, let me know later on. She said, there will be plenty to do bye and bye.

(Harrington & Doherty)

Miss Sarah Scholick (?) of Cook street had clue.

Janice Duckworth No. 43 John street told her that Annie Connelly aged eight years, and Mamie Smith aged ten years, heard cries in Mr. Borden's house, and a few minutes later a man came out the front door wiping his coat and vest with a handkerchief.

These children deny this; the oldest saying she was at her cousins on the corner of Second and Rodman streets all that day, and the other girl was with her. It was simply child's talk.

Thos. Walker, a tailor employed by John Carey, lived in a

tenement of Mrs. Borden's on Fourth street. He was ordered out, and R. S. Reeds store took his furniture. He worked all day Thursday, so says Mr. Carey. Walker said he had no feeling against Mr. Borden. What trouble he had was caused by himself. He said he went on a drunk, and could not pay his bills, so he had to vacate the tenement and return the furniture, which was purchased on the installment plan.

Tuesday August 9, 1892.

P. H. Doherty.

Went with the Marshal to summons Lizzie. Returned to the station. When the Inquest adjourned, remained in the Court Room until 5.10 P.M.

Peleg Brightman reported to having seen an ax covered with blood in a house over the River on the Brayton farm. Officer Medley and I took Mr. Brightman. We found the ax which was owned by Joseph Silvia. There was no blood on it at this time. Silvia gave a full account of himself. There were two children there, who had dirty dresses on, which were caked with blood. The mother explained this, by saying they were very much subject to the nose bleed, and as the ax is always at the back door yard, where there is a pile of wood, the blood from them might have stained the blade. The ax was old, dull and much worn. In our judgment it could not produce the wounds, and if it were used for this purpose, it would not be carried so far away, over the River, and by ponds, one of which was close by the house, when either of those places would afford such a secure hiding place.

Wednesday August 10, 1892.

Doherty & Harrington.

A story was circulated that Lizzie tried to induce Bridget to leave the house by reminding her of a cheap sale of dress goods at F. E. Sargents, and offered her money to purchase one pattern, after Bridget said she could not afford it. Bridget denies this, but says that Lizzie told her of the sale, and she, Bridget, said, well, I am going to have one.

We then went to Mrs. Geo. Whitehead, on Fourth street. She said "this property was owned in part by me and my mother. My mother wished to dispose of her interest. I could not purchase it, and did not want to sell; so in order that I might keep my place, Mrs. Borden, my step sister, bought the other interest. This the girls did not like; and they showed their feeling on the street by not recognizing me. Lizzie did not like Mrs. Borden."

Engaged Maurice Daly, carpenter, to go to the Borden house, about one o'clock, Marshal, Mr. Seaver and I. From there we took a marble slat from the west end of the dressing case, a piece of molding that capped the mop-board, and a piece of plaster, to which was adhered the wall paper. Each of these articles had spots of blood on them. Mrs. C. J. Holmes then asked "do you want the bed spread and pillow shams?" The Marshal replied "if you please." These articles were taken from the northwest room on the second floor, where Mrs. Borden was found.

A piece of wood was taken from the west casing of the door which leads from the dining to the sitting room where Mr. Borden was murdered. This piece of wood had a spatter of blood on it. There was also taken one pair of ladies low tie shoes, and one pair of ladies black stockings.

From the barn we took one willow basket containing two pieces

of round lead pipe, and a number of pieces of scrap sheet lead; and one wooden box in which were pieces of round and sheet lead. The basket and contents were found up stairs, and the box and its holdings, down stairs. All were brought to the station house, and locked in the store room by Marshal Hilliard.

I then summoned Mrs. Churchill, Hiram C. Harrington and Allen to appear in court at 4. P.M.

Went in search of Dr Handy; found him at Chas. J. Holmes. Asked him, would he accompany an officer to Boston to see a party whom the Boston police located, and who they thought resembled the person whom he saw.

He said "well, I suppose I must go."

I said "No, there is nothing compulsory about the request."

He did not seem to like the idea of going, and said "it is a very warm night, and I have quite a number of cases on hand, from which I expect births, but then, (laughing) I suppose they are as apt to come during the day as well as night. Wait a moment and I'll see."

He then went to another part of the house, and talked with the Holmes family for a few minutes. He then returned to the parlor and said "well, I'll go. Who is going with me, is it you?"

I told him I could not say.

"Will the officer call at my house, will he come in a carriage, or will we go to the depot in the horse car?"

I said I did not know, but whichever way, the officer would be there in time.

After arriving in Boston, we called at Station 4, and learned something of, and the residence of the man we sought. We then went to Police Headquarters, and after transacting my business there, we retired.

Evening. Wednesday 10, 1892.

Doherty.

Summoned Hannan H. Gifford, Alice Russell, Chas. S. Sawyer and Mrs. Geo. Whitehead.

Thursday 11, 1892.

In the morning we went again to Station 4, from whence a local officer accompanied us to No. 19 Oxford street, the home of Henrick Wood, the man wanted. Mr. Wood was not at home, he had gone to Lexington in the morning to see a friend who was building a house near a lot owned by him. From the lady who came to the door, we got a description of Mr. Wood. She also showed us a photograph of him. She handed it to me, and I immediately turned it over to the Doctor, who before he had it rightly in his hand, pronounced him not the person. There were three persons on the card, two men and a child. The child was in Mr. Woods arms. Owing to the position in which he sat, his face was very much shaded, which made it rather difficult of observation. This, together with the fact that Dr. Handy so readily pronounced him not the man, is, to my mind, very significant. His social relations with Miss Lizzie are very close. She was to spend her vacation at Dr. Handy's cottage at Marion, with his daughter.

He left Boston for home at 8.30 A. M. I went again to Police Headquarters, and with a detective went to the Diebold(?) Safe Co. No. 72 Sudbury street. From there a mechanic accompanied

me home.

At 3.15 P. M. in company with A. J. Jennings went to open the safe. I remained there until relieved by the District Attorney at about 5:00 P.M.

Doherty.

LIZZIE'S TURNCOAT FRIEND

(Continued from Page 1)

hearing, but it was not until the grand jury hearing that she revealed her "burning of the dress" testimony. She was also a witness at the trial of Miss Lizzie A. Borden in June of 1893. While on the stand describing the events which occurred in the kitchen of the Borden house on Sunday, August 7, 1892, Miss Russell was instructed to make a series of marks on the floor plans of the house drawn by architect Thomas Kieran.* An unusual legacy, the cross where she was standing, the outline of the stove in the Borden kitchen and the round mark illustrating where the burned dress was stored in the clothes press can still be seen on these trial exhibits in the Historical Society's archive. Following the trial and its aftermath, she ceased to be on friendly terms with the Misses Borden, living a life that can best be described as quiet and genteel. Mrs. Florence Cook Brigham, to whom she taught sewing, fondly remembered her as "a gentle person" with "lovely white hair" and believed that she "would not have told the story about the burning of the dress if her conscience hadn't bothered her."

Alice Russell rarely spoke of the events of August 1892 and their aftermath; few who knew her in later life had any knowledge of her close association and involvement in the case. On the rare occasions when Miss Russell discussed the case with her cousin Ida, the latter woman's young daughter Mildred was asked to leave the room, the conversation not being considered proper for a young girl to hear. Alice told her cousin that she thought Lizzie Borden was innocent of the murders of Mr. and Mrs. Borden until August 7, 1892, when she saw her burn the dress in the kitchen stove. From the day of that observation until she breathed her last, she was convinced of Lizzie Borden's guilt. There is little doubt that Miss Russell knew much about the goings-on in the Borden residence during the days following the discovery of the bodies, taking most of that information undisclosed to her grave. Always the lady and true to her Yankee heritage, she believed, as did many closely associated with the Borden case, that certain things were "not discussed." For that conviction, she deserves our admiration and respect.

**(Editor's note: There is a bit of a mystery surrounding Mr. Robert C. Kieran's trial testimony. He was the second witness for the prosecution in the Borden trial on Thursday, August 25, 1892. District Attorney Hosea Morrill Knowlton conducted the direct examination. The cross examination was handled by Andrew Jackson Jennings. Judge Josiah Coleman Blaisdell presided. His testimony is not included in the only existing official preliminary trial transcript, however, Miss Annie M. White, court stenographer, was not unaware of his testimony. On the third page of Dr. Dolan's testimony, page 90 of the trial transcript, she typed the following, including the parentheses.)*

"(At this point the examination of Dr. [William P.] Dolan

was suspended, and Mr. Kieran, the surveyor, testified.)"

The following is the complete as-reported Kieran segment from New Bedford's *The Evening Standard*, *LIZZIE ON TRIAL*, Thursday, August 25, 1892, front page, column three:

"Robert C. Kieran testified to the correctness of a plan which was drawn by him of the Borden house. It was on the scale of a quarter of an inch to the foot. He gave measurements taken of the yard and fence on the Borden premises. Blood spots on the floor west of the sofa in the sitting-room were described, and witness said there were blood spots on a picture five feet four inches from the sofa. On the same wall as the picture 18 inches away were blood spots. From the house to the fence on the north side of the Borden premises the distance is 15 feet 4 inches. From the house to the nearest end of the barn is 14 feet 3 inches.

Witness was cross-examined by Andrew J. Jennings, who with Melvin O. Adams of Boston represents defence. He said: The sofa was not in the sitting room when I got to the Borden house. It was brought in by Dr. Dolan's orders. There was a blood spot on the architrave of the door in the sitting room which leads to the kitchen. I did not notice that this spot indicated any direction when it struck the door. The spot was within six inches of the jamb of the door. The blood on the picture was called to my attention by Dr. Dolan, who wanted me to measure it. I noticed no other spot on the picture. The spot I found was difficult to see until I turned the picture to the light. The spot was an elongated one. I do not know if the elongation was upward or not. From the appearance of the spot I thought it had been thrown from the sitting room.

Here counsel called for the sketch of the piece of wood with the blood spot upon it. After looking it over carefully he continued the cross-examination of the witness. The witness said: The spot was on the side of the door frame nearest the parlor and about three inches from the end of the door frame.

The witness continued: There was a large pile of boards in the yard at the Borden residence up against the east fence that I did not put upon the plan simply because I forgot it.

The witness was asked if from anything he observed there was anything to prevent an ordinary man from going up on the pile and right over the fence.

The question was promptly objected to by the district attorney and was ruled out.

In answer to other questions witness said that the pile of boards was an ordinary one, regularly placed and laid up against the fence.

The witness was instructed during the noon recess to make a plan of the kitchen and measure the height of the ceiling and locate the pile of boards and place them upon the plan."

Mr. Kieran was recalled the following day, Friday, August 26, 1892 by Mr. Knowlton. *His testimony is not included in the only existing official preliminary trial transcript.*

The following reproduces the complete Kieran as-reported testimony from New Bedford's *The Evening Standard*, Saturday, August 27, 1892, page 8, column 4.

"Thomas Kieran was then recalled and presented remodelled plans in which the woodpile in the Borden yard appeared. The ceiling in the sitting room in the Borden house is 8 feet 10 inches above the floor."

(Editor's note: Why wasn't his testimony included in the trial testimony by court stenographer Annie M. White? Miss White also testified, and her testimony is not included either! Why? I'll never know! After all, these were the only ones she missed. As Alice would say, "curiouser and curiouser.")

LIZBITS

(Continued from Page 5)

Under his aegis she played in a great many of his pictures. In *Intolerance*, a movie bigger than any that preceded it, she acted as his assistant in designing sets, helping lighting and cutting, research and in writing advertisements.

In 1920 her sister Dorothy became a married woman by eloping with actor James Rennie, but Lillian considered marriage "straight-laced and domineering."

In the years that followed Lillian's career became even more triumphant. After playing the lead in *Orphans of the Storm* she was invited to the White House for lunch with President Warren G. Harding.

As her power at the box office waxed the career of Griffith waned.

Lillian then affiliated with a company headed by Charles H. Duell where she became an executive, as well leading lady, with her own business office. She was the first American star to make a movie in Italy where she filmed *The White Sister*. The premiere in New York attracted such luminaries as the Governor of New York, Al Smith, and the socialite Vanderbilts and Belmonts. The film ran for six months at special prices on Broadway, and even longer at popular prices.

In the mid-twenties there were rumors of a romance with Charles Duell. Lillian's unblemished reputation was compromised by a front-page scandal that involved years of litigation. In the end she emerged victorious, wealthy, and her honor intact. Already celebrated as a great actress, as a result of the trial's intense publicity, Lillian now commanded even greater box office attraction.

Lillian fell in love with George Jean Nathan and it was as his companion that she secured her place among the elite of America's arts and letters in the twenties and thirties.

In 1925 she negotiated an enviable contract with MGM at a salary of \$800,000.00 for six pictures and under which she was permitted to exercise her own choice of director and cast. Ever intelligent and strong-willed she exerted considerable control over her films. Her first picture *Bohème* was a spectacular success and proved to be the most profitable of MGM's releases in 1925 and 1926.

In the latter year Mary Gish, Lillian's mother, suffered a stroke while in Europe. Lillian, always the loving and caring daughter hurried to the continent. Mary made a good recovery, and twenty years after she was still a beautiful lady. She died September 17, 1948.

Lillian considered silent movies the purest form of the art and was averse to accepting roles in the new "talkies." She was the personification of the silent film, usually playing the frail girl caught in the cruel maelstrom of life. However, by 1927 sound film finally took over the industry.

Miss Gish's first talking role was as the star in *One Romantic Night*. Although the movie proved to be a flop, The New York Times reported that because Lillian's voice recorded so well "... it causes her screen work to be far more interesting than it was in silent productions."

Lillian had a long and close association with George Jean Nathan. At about this time rumors were rife that they were about to be married. She put an end to the gossip with the statement that "Marriage is a career. I have preferred a stage career rather than a

marriage career." George's name was the last to be romantically linked to that of Lillian Gish.

She began her stage career with three appearances before acting in *Nine Pine Street*. Although the play could not be counted as a success, her portrayal of the Lizzie character, so different than her usual roles, united the critics in her praise, citing her strong, deep, commanding voice and facial expressions.

With *Nine Pine Street* Lillian Gish proved her ability to adjust to the demands of live theater. From that time onwards she went from success to success in play after play. In 1940 she accepted the lead in the Chicago company of *Life With Father* which ran for an unprecedented sixty-six weeks.

In 1949 she made her first appearance, followed by many others, on television. Her last appearance on the stage was in 1975, the last in motion pictures was in 1987 when she co-starred with Bette Davis in *The Whales of August*. Her first movie in Technicolor was *Duel in the Sun* (1946) in which she shared leads with such luminaries as Gregory Peck and Lionel Barrymore. She had a longer life on the boards and on the silver screen than any other actress. Although considered less popular than Norma Talmadge or Mary Pickford, her claim for popularity depended entirely on her ability as an actress.

Lillian's beloved sister, Dorothy, her constant companion, died in 1966 at a clinic in Rapallo, Italy. Her final years were sad, weak, and depressed. In life she was always the fun-loving sister as contrasted with Lillian's dedication, and discipline.

With the passing years Lillian's professional activities multiplied. She crisscrossed the country giving lectures. At one point she had seventeen engagements in the short space of six weeks, indefatigably doing her part in raising interest in the silent screen.

Her final bow to Broadway was a singing part in a musical review in 1986. In that year she was in fine health, despite two previous hip operations. At age 92 she had a small part in a movie by Alan Alda.

As a long-time Republican supporter Lillian exchanged birthday greetings with President Eisenhower. She visited Mamie at the White House and thereafter the two became fast friends. She supported the campaign of Richard Nixon, and was on a first name basis with Ronald and Nancy Reagan.

There is this that has to be said in assessing Lillian's career and character: She joined the *America First Committee*, opposing America's involvement in World War II. She thereby became associated with individuals tainted by expressions of racism and anti-Semitism, and support of fascism and Hitler's Germany. Previously many of her friends and associates had expressed derogatory sentiments, without affecting her friendship with them. But with it all the taint of racism was never publicly attributed to the actress.

Miss Gish was the recipient of many honors. She was awarded honorary degrees at three colleges. She received an Academy Award nomination in 1946 and an honorary Oscar in 1971. She was called "the first lady of the screen" when she was given the Life Achievement Award by the *American Film Institute* in 1984. She was a *Kennedy Center* honoree in 1982. The following year France bestowed on her the *Medaille de Commandeur des Arts and Lettres*. She won the Best Actress Award by the *National Board of Review*.

Lillian Gish died peacefully in her own bed in her New York apartment February 27, 1993, a "Legend in her own time." Her

estate was valued at ten million dollars, the bulk of which was placed in the Dorothy and Lillian Gish Trust, devoted to excellence in the Arts. It donated over a million dollars to the Museum of Modern Art in New York, earmarked for the preservation, exhibition, and research of her films.

Much of the information for this essay is derived from the recently published biography, *Lillian Gish - Her Legend and Her Life* by Charles Affron. Indeed I have quoted liberally from that work. Further facts were derived from the review of the book in the New York Times, as well as from that indispensable tool, the Internet.

LIZZIE ON LINE

(Continued from Page 6)

Lizzie deserved a substantial investigative site that treated her case with scholarly respect. She needed a site that did not commit to whether she carried out the murders or not, but left it up to the reader to decide. The only way that could happen would be if visitors were provided with all sorts of evidence and sources to help them in *their* search for the truth. So, it became wildly important to provide those sources free of charge to anyone in the world who might want to read them - from the Police Witness Statements to the complete Trial Transcript itself, and everything in between.

Such a vision cannot be realized without the extensive help of others, and that is where several crucial people came into play. They were/are Terence Duniho, Harry Widdows, and Kat Koorey, my sister. To those of you lucky enough to have known Terence, you will remember him as a maven of accuracy, an eagle-eye editor, Mr. Specific. It was that talent, that skill, that he lent to me when the idea for the site was first inspired by the article that we wrote together for the *Quarterly* on Lizzie's Inquest testimony (October, 2001 issue). We needed a place to display the most accurate transcription of Volume I of the Inquest we could craft from our sources. And we needed the site up and running by the publication date of the article, some two months later.

Harry Widdows is a man of many talents, not the least of which is his extraordinary desire to transcribe the primary source documents of the Borden murders for ease of use. The hard copies of these historically important court records are cumbersome, to be sure. You have to have a very good memory to work the pages, to mentally cross-reference names and dates, to make them helpful in your investigation. But Harry knew that if there was a word-processing version of these sources, one could effect computer searches to locate any word or phrase! It was Harry who *finally* brought this case into the 21st Century, using modern technology to help us understand and learn and possibly solve the case of another century. And Harry's generosity in making his transcriptions available to anyone who asked for them is a further tribute to his great kindness.

I had already transcribed the Police Witness Statements, the Inquest Volumes I and II (with Terence), and Lizzie's, Emma's, and John Morse's wills, as well as several small public domain works and poems. Harry and I both worked over the Christmas holidays of 2001-2002 to transcribe the Preliminary Hearing, all five volumes. All of the above were turned into PDFs (portable document format) so that a person could read them on any computer.⁴ The Porter and Pearson scans were the work of Harry and Terence.

Kat Koorey and I have been gathering sources, citations, and ephemera on the Borden case for over twenty-five years. Between us, we have quite a collection of Bordenia. Kat's mind, however, is the real treasure trove - she absorbs and processes information like no one else I know. She is able to quickly remember where and when she saw some fact or name and has the enviable ability to correlate details on disparate subjects, making possible chronologies, timelines, and suspect and blood evidence lists. Much like a professional journalist, her methodology is to find at least two sources that verify the information before she allows it to be printed.

Since time was an issue with the first launch, I made the decision to use color to add visual consistency to the site. The first page was merely a collection of nine, then later, twelve differently colored boxes that were really just links to the site's major thematic sections. Each box's color was replayed as that connected page's background so the visitor would *feel* in the right place without having to think about it or read it on the masthead. I distinctly remember having many conversations with Terence over the placement of one color next to another, he offering suggestions that perhaps I needed another shade of green instead of blue in the upper right hand corner! All of his comments were helpful; especially since I knew that each browser and computer operating system sees a web site slightly (and sometimes substantially) differently.⁵ I am a Mac user and I use Internet Explorer. Terence used a PC and Netscape. This extra pair of eyes was vital to the visual editing that took place in the early stages of design.

One area that I did not devote an inordinate amount of attention to was detailing the facts of the case. While I provided source documents, books, and over a thousand images related to the case (including every possible image of 92 Second Street, Maplecroft, people involved in the story, and postcards, maps, and images of Fall River and its environs), I did not give the visitor a long description of the Borden murders or explain the case. Using a brief narrative of the story of the crimes excerpted from Radin, I crafted the site assuming that anyone interested enough to find *LizzieAndrewBorden.com* would already have some background knowledge and wouldn't need me to rehash it for them. While no one complained about this omission, or suggested that the site be updated to include it, I felt that this area needed to be addressed, if only to capture the attention of novices who may happen by. In addition, as I gained some perspective on the site, I realized that many areas needed to be fleshed out, added to, and improved upon. There were so many areas for improvement, in fact, that I made a rather sizable and ever-expanding list. This copious collection of items soon necessitated an entirely new version of the web site, one that would incorporate additional areas and subsequent finds and contributions.

As I began to rethink *LizzieAndrewBorden.com*, I wanted to take the next step in the site's evolution by organizing it differently. Instead of thinking of the site as a collection of images and documents, I decided to imagine it as a physical place where interested parties could go to conduct research and browse images. As I mapped the site on paper, it dawned on me that what I was describing was a combination library and museum. This epiphany inspired me to surf virtual museums, crime libraries, and historical societies for commonalities and navigational terminology. Everything began to fall into place with the decision to refocus the site as the *Lizzie Andrew Borden Virtual Museum and*

Library. Suddenly, areas of study that already existed and that I had wanted to include now found a natural hierarchy, one that made sense on every level. Plus, this new focus had the added advantage of furthering my original mission to treat the Borden murders with scholarly respect. It would finally be a place where historians, scholars, buffs, novices, and the inquisitive could feel welcomed.

The site is broken down into eight major areas: Galleries, Crime Library, Resources, New Research, Diversions, a link to the Lizzie Borden Society, Writer's Corner, and Lizzie's Gift Shop, where you can shop for and swap Lizzie-related items.

An important new feature to *LizzieAndrewBorden.com* is a site-wide search component that is accessible on the first page. This should certainly aid those who are in quick need of a piece of information or citation and will also work well for those who want to browse the site by subject or name.

In order to flesh out the scholarly and creative side of the site, I invited contributions by members of the *Lizzie Borden Society*, an online discussion forum that I moderate,⁶ and received great response. We now have an expanded catalogue of original works by researchers and fiction writers, a large collection of press reports relating to the case, and new downloads of early essays on the case (John H. Wigmore's "The Borden Case," published in 1893, and Judge Charles Davis' "The Conduct of the Law in the Borden Case," published in 1894). In addition, I have the complete texts of A. L. Bixby's 1907 poem, *To Lizzie* that was alluded to in the July 2002 issue of the *Quarterly*, Todd Lunday's *The Mystery Unveiled* (1893), Arthur Sherman Phillips' *The Borden Murder Mystery* (1946), Porter's *The Fall River Tragedy* (1893), and Pearson's *The Trial of Lizzie Borden* (1937). More public domain documents for download are in the works.

LizzieAndrewBorden.com also has a humor section with contributions by resident Borden humorist and *Quarterly* contributor Sherry Chapman, and a riotous parody of the case titled *I Love Lizzie* by Kathleen Carbone. Kathleen has also allowed the site to premiere in weekly installments her novel of Lizzie's life after the trial, called *This is Maplecroft*.⁷ For those who would like a break from the ordinary, you will also find for your enjoyment five Word Search games, an astrological breakdown of the Borden family, and images of Lizzie, Uncle Morse, Emma, and Andrew that you can morph and warp while online. You can even save your altered images and instructions on how to do so are included.

Besides the press reports and the primary and secondary source material for download, scholars will find three extensive annotated bibliographies, one on the case in general that includes citations for fiction, non-fiction, and media sources, and two that record the contents of *The Lizzie Borden Quarterly*, one arranged by issue and the other by author. Lastly, I have included a list of Online Resources arranged by subject to aid you in your investigation into the crimes and times.

The only real way to chart a site's success is to track usage. I am happy to report that in less than one year, *LizzieAndrewBorden.com* has had over 1,300,000 hits from over 56 different countries. Charting the hits by day, it seems that every time the *Learning Channel* or the *History Channel* replays a Lizzie documentary, the traffic increases substantially.

I am always open to suggestion, so if any of you have ideas for the site, fiction or non-fiction contributions, or find any errors, please feel free to contact me at koorey@lizzieandrewborden.com

1. Web design programs range in price from \$299 to \$799. For the design of the first version of *LizzieAndrewBorden.com*, I used Adobe's *Page Mill*, a free program that came with my Mac. *Page Mill* is now defunct, having ceased being updated in 1998. For my most current design, I used *Dreamweaver* by Macromedia. Cost was \$400.
2. Marcus, Brent. *Advertising and Marketing*. Digitrends.net: New Demographics Determined. Accessed: 23 July 2002. http://www.digitrends.net/mna/index_15193.html
3. HTML is the code of the Internet, and is an acronym for Hypertext Markup Language. All web pages are written in code, however, web design software uses visual layout tools. One needn't know HTML to build a web site, but it doesn't hurt! By selecting 'View Source' in your browser's menu you may view the HTML code for any web page.
4. Adobe® Portable Document Format (PDF) is the open de facto standard for electronic document distribution worldwide. Adobe PDF is a universal file format that preserves all the fonts, formatting, graphics, and color of any source document, regardless of the application and platform used to create it. Adobe PDF files are compact and can be shared, viewed, navigated, and printed exactly as intended by anyone with free Adobe Acrobat® Reader® software." Adobe.com. Site Accessed: 23 July 2002. <http://www.adobe.com/products/acrobat/adobepdf.html>
5. Browsers include Microsoft Internet Explorer, Netscape Navigator, OmniWeb, Opera, Mozilla, WebTV, and Lynx, a text-to-speech browser for the visually impaired. Operating systems include Windows 98, etc., Mac OS, or Linux.
6. The URL for the *Lizzie Borden Society Online Forum* is: <http://www.arborwood.com/awforums/show-forum-1.php?fid=27>.
You are invited to stop by and lurk or join and post your thoughts and theories on the case. We are a polite and genial group of (currently) 80 members.
7. All humor and fiction appears in the section of the site titled "Writer's Corner."

IN PURSUIT OF THE "PROCEEDINGS"

(Continued from Page 7)

I next phoned the Fall River Historical Society. The woman in the shop said that (as of September 11) the historical society has an "ample supply". Plenty in the shop and probably more in the basement. Their price? \$30 each. (Their website lists the book at \$25. It is outdated.)

Back to Mr. Flynn. "As a bookdealer and its publisher, what would you say the book is worth if it is out of print?" Again, he answered promptly. "... In any event, the fair price today is more in the \$25 - \$50 range."

Three hundred dollars for a copy of "The Proceedings"? Go fish!

Sources

Amazon.com

Bristol Community College bookstore: Phone conversation, 9-11-02.

E-bay.com

Fall River Historical Society: Phone conversation, gift shop, 9-11-02.

Flynn, Robert: Personal correspondence, 9-10 and 9-11-02.

Half.com

McGinn, Sally: Personal telephone conversations in August and September, 2002.

Rivera, Geraldo: I couldn't reach him, but I coulda used him!

A FRIENDSHIP DESTROYED

(Continued from Page 8)

Regarding the stained dress, Emma testified at the trial as follows:

Q. (Mr. Jennings) Now, where was the dress, if you know, on Saturday, the day of the search?

A. I saw it hanging in the clothes press over the front entry.

Q. How come you see it at that time?

A. I went in to hang up the dress that I had been wearing during the day and there was no vacant nail and I searched around to find a nail and I noticed this dress.

Q. Did you say anything to your sister about that dress in consequence of your not finding a nail to hang your dress on?

A. I said, "You have not destroyed that old dress yet? Why don't you?"

Q. What was the condition of that dress at that time?

A. It was dirty, very much soiled and badly faded.

Q. When did you next see that Bedford cord dress?

A. Sunday morning, I think, about nine o'clock.

Q. Now, will you tell the court and the jury all that you saw or heard that morning in the kitchen?

A. I was washing dishes and I heard my sister's voice and I turned around and saw she was standing at the foot of the stove, between the foot of the stove and the dining room door. This dress was hanging on her arm and she says, "I think I shall burn this old dress up." I said, "Why don't you?", or "You had better," or "I would if I were you," or something like that. I can't tell the exact words, but I meant, do it. And I turned back and continued washing dishes and did not see her burn it and did not pay any more attention to her at that time.

Q. What was the condition of the kitchen doors and windows at that time?

A. They were all wide open, screens in and blinds open.

Q. Were officers all about at that time?

A. They were all about the yard.

Alice Russell was one of the most important weapons that the prosecution had in its arsenal against Lizzie Borden. She took the stand at the trial in New Bedford on June 8, 1893. Russell described Lizzie's premonitions the day before the murders of harm that might come to the elder Borden. She also related to the jurors that Lizzie had told her she feared the family bread and milk may have been poisoned by one of her father's enemies, and how sick the Borden were on the Wednesday morning before the killings.

Russell told the jury about the robbery and disappearance of Abby's jewelry in a daring daylight burglary two weeks prior to the murders and how Andrew protested when Abby went to see

Dr. Bowen fearing she had been poisoned the day before the crimes occurred. Alice also stated that Lizzie told her she was in the barn seeking some tin to repair a screen while Andrew was being attacked. She also said Lizzie changed her clothes after the bodies were discovered from a dark dress to a pink and white stripped wrapper.

Alice Russell's testimony serves as proof to those who believe Lizzie Borden guilty of the murders that she had planned the deed well in advance. Lizzie mentioned threats from non-existent enemies that were carried out on August 4 by someone not a member of the Borden household. She changed from a stained dress to a clean one and later burned the evidence in the kitchen stove. She concocted the story of why she had gone to the barn and set up friends, especially Alice Russell, so that they would have to tell of incidents on the witness stand that were supportive of Lizzie's innocence.

Lizzie Borden could not have foreseen, however, that Alice would see Lizzie burn the dress that was worn and possibly bloodstained during the murders and later speak of the incident to a detective. To those who were convinced Lizzie was a murderess, Russell's testimony was evidence of her guilt.

Russell was cross-examined by defense team leader George Dexter Robinson. Robinson was able to get her to admit that she never saw any blood on the dress Lizzie burned. Russell also noticed no blood on Lizzie's skin or hair the day of the murder when she and Adelaide Churchill were comforting and fanning Lizzie in the kitchen soon after Andrew's body was found. When asked about the note Lizzie said Abby received telling of a sick friend and causing Lizzie to believe Abby went out of the house instead of up to the guest room where she met her death, Alice said that she never saw a note but also admitted she heard Lizzie tell Dr. Bowen that Abby probably threw it into the kitchen stove before she planned to leave the house. This bolsters the arguments of those convinced of Lizzie Borden's innocence.

Alice M. Russell is remembered through sketches and interviews. Those who knew her regarded her as not particularly attractive but with a "gentility about her," in the words of Borden chronicler Frank Spiering. She was awkward with a thin, long neck, thick, curved eyebrows and a sharp nose, much like the New England females contemporary columnist Joe Howard often ridiculed in his articles about the Borden case.

Alice Russell was born in New Bedford to Frederick W. and Judith (Manley) Russell. She was employed as a clerk in Fall River for several years and later in life taught sewing in the local public school system. Russell was promoted to Supervisor of Sewing in 1908 and retired from that position in 1913. She never married and lived in Fall River for the rest of her life. Russell was also related by marriage to defense witness Delia S. Manley.

Alice M. Russell - The Trial Testimony

(Continued from Page 9)

Q. Now speak louder; I find difficulty in hearing you. About how long did she stay with you, Miss Russell, that night?

A. I think she went at nine, or five minutes after. That is as near as I know.

Q. And of course during the meantime you and she talked together about various subjects?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Was anything said in reference to going to Marion?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Won't you state what was said by her and by you, and then go on and state the conversation which followed?

A. I think when she came in she said, "I have taken your advice, and I have written to Marion that I will come." I don't know what came in between, I don't know as this followed that, but I said, "I am glad you are going," as I had urged her to go before.

Q. (By Mr. Robinson.) Be kind enough to speak a little louder, if you can.

A. Shall I repeat that?

Q. If you please, because I didn't hear it.

A. I said, "I am glad you are going." I had urged her before to go, and I didn't know she had decided to go. I said, "I am glad you are going." And I don't know just what followed, but I said something about her having a good time, and she said "Well, I don't know; I feel depressed. I feel as if something was hanging over me that I cannot throw off, and it comes over me at times, no matter where I am." And she says, "When I was at the table the other day, when I was at Marion, the girls were laughing and talking and having a good time, and this feeling came over me, and one of them spoke and said, 'Lizzie, why don't you talk?' I don't know what was said after that. I don't remember of any more conversation about Marion. Whether there was or not I don't remember.

Q. (By Mr. Moody.) Well, then, go on and state how the conversation went on, taking your own method.

A. I suppose it was followed right on after that. When she spoke, she says, "I don't know; father has so much trouble." Oh, I am a little ahead of the story. She said, "Mr. and Mrs. Borden were awfully sick last night." And I said, "Why, what is the matter; something they have eaten?" She said, "We were all sick," she said, "all but Maggie." And I said, "Something you think you have eaten?" She said, "We don't know. We had some baker's bread, and all ate of it but Maggie, and Maggie wasn't sick." And I said, "Well, it couldn't have been the bread; if it had been baker's bread I should suppose other people would be sick, and I haven't heard of anybody." And she says, "That is so." And she says, "Sometimes I think our milk might be poisoned." And I said, "Well, how do you get your milk; how could it be poisoned?" And she said, "We have the milk come in a can and set on the step, and we have an empty can. They put out the empty can overnight, and the next morning when they bring the milk they take the empty can." And I said, "Well, if they put anything in the can the farmer would see it." And then I said---I asked her what time the milk came, if she knew. She said, "I think about four o'clock." And I said, "Well, it is light at four. I shouldn't think anybody would dare to come then and tamper with the cans for fear somebody would see them." And she said, "I shouldn't think so." And she said, "They were awfully sick; and I wasn't sick, I didn't vomit; but I heard them vomiting and stepped to the door and asked if I could do anything, and they said No."

Q. (By Mr. Robinson.) Will you please repeat that?

A. Lizzie said "I didn't vomit. I heard them vomit, but I didn't

vomit; I wasn't sick enough to vomit, but they were. I heard them, and I stepped to the door and asked them if I could do anything, and they said No."

Q. (By Mr. Moody.) Now, go on with the conversation.

A. Well, I think she told me that they were better in the morning and that Mrs. Borden thought that they had been poisoned, and she went over to Dr. Bowen's---said she was going over to Dr. Bowen's.

Q. Well, we won't follow that any further. Is there any other thing that she began to talk about? Proceed in your own way, Miss Russell.

A. I can't recall anything just now. Of course she talked about something else, because she was there two hours, but I cannot think about it.

Q. Anything about trouble with tenants, or anything of that sort?

A. She says, "I don't know," she says, "I feel afraid sometimes that father has got an enemy. For," she said, "he has so much trouble with his men that come to see him." She told me of a man that came to see him, and she heard him say---she didn't see him, but heard her father say, "I don't care to let my property for such business." And she said the man answered sneeringly, "I shouldn't think you would care what you let your property for." And she said, "Father was mad and ordered him out of the house." She told me of seeing a man run around the house one night when she went home. I have forgotten where she had been. She said, "And you know the barn has been broken into twice." And I said, "Oh well, you know well that that was somebody after pigeons; there is nothing in there for them to go after but pigeons." "Well," she says, "They have broken into the house in broad daylight, with Emma and Maggie and me there." And I said, "I never heard of that before." And she said, "Father forbade our telling it." So I asked her about it, and she said it was in Mrs. Borden's room, what she called her dressing room. She said her things were ransacked, and they took a watch and chain and money and car tickets, and something else that I can't remember. And there was a nail left in the keyhole; she didn't know why that was left; whether they got in with it or what. I asked her if her father did anything about it, and she said he gave it to the police, but they didn't find out anything; and she said father expected that they would catch the thief by the tickets. She remarked, "Just as if anybody would use those tickets."

Q. Yes. Is there anything else that you recall? Anything about burning the house?

A. She said, "I feel as if I wanted to sleep with my eyes half open---with one eye open half the time---for fear they will burn the house down over us."

Q. Anything else in that connection?

A. She said that before this other.

Q. What had she said just before the burning of the house?

A. I think that was the beginning of her telling me about her fears of somebody breaking in, before she told me about the breaking into the barn, I think.

Q. Is there anything else that occurs to you in the conversation?

A. I don't think of anything.

- Q. Anything about doing anything to any member of the household; not herself, but anyone else; anything to her father; she was afraid that some one would do anything?
- A. Oh, she said, "I am afraid somebody will do something; I don't know but what somebody will do something." I think that was the beginning.
- Q. Please state that.
- A. "I think sometimes --- I am afraid sometimes that somebody will do something to him; he is so discourteous to people." And then she said, "Dr. Bowen came over. Mrs. Borden went over, and father didn't like it because she was going; and she told him where she was going, and he says, 'Well, my money shan't pay for it.' She went over to Dr. Bowen's, and Dr. Bowen told her---she told him she was afraid they were poisoned ---and Dr. Bowen laughed, and said, No, there wasn't any poison. And she came back, and Dr. Bowen came over." And she said, "I am so ashamed, the way father treated Dr. Bowen. I was so mortified." And she said after he had gone Mrs. Borden said she thought it was too bad for him to treat Dr. Bowen so, and said he didn't want him coming over there that way.
- Q. Now have you stated substantially all you remember about that talk the night before?
- A. Yes, all that I can remember.
- Q. Upon the next morning, August 4th, did you receive a visit from Bridget Sullivan?
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. About what time was it?
- A. I don't know what time it was.
- Q. Did you have occasion to notice the time?
- A. Not after eleven.
- Q. Did you notice the eleven o'clock bell?
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. Was it before or after that bell that Bridget came to you?
- A. After.
- Q. What were you doing when she came?
- A. I was at my work.
- Q. In consequence of anything that she said to you did you go anywhere? In consequence of what Bridget told you did you go somewhere?
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. Where did you go?
- A. I went upstairs.
- Q. And what did you do upstairs?
- A. Changed my dress.
- Q. What did you do then?
- A. I went over to Mr. Borden's.
- Q. Speak up please.
- A. I went over to the Borden house.
- Q. When you got to the Borden house do you recall who were there?
- A. I only remember Lizzie.
- Q. Where was she when you got there?
- A. I am not positive.
- Q. Was she down stairs or upstairs?
- A. Down stairs.
- Q. Did you have any talk with her or did she say anything to you?
- A. When?
- Q. When you got there, or any time before you went upstairs.
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. Well, go on and tell us what it was.
- A. I cannot tell it in order, for it is very disconnected. I remember very little of it.
- Q. Well tell us that part which you do remember.
- A. I think she was standing in the door, leaning against the door frame, as I went in, and I asked her to sit down in the rocking chair, which she did. There was somebody came around, I don't know who they were. There were people there, came in; either they were there or came right in or something. I don't know what followed.
- Q. Now let me ask you if anything was said about her whereabouts when her father was killed?
- A. That was some time later, in telling us, she told us about going to the barn.
- Q. What did she say when she told you that?
- A. I don't remember. She said she went to the barn. She told us when she came in --- she said that she saw her father, and that he was killed.
- Q. Did she say anything about what she went to the barn for?
- A. Not until I asked her.
- Q. State what you asked her and what she replied.
- A. I said, "What did you go to the barn for, Lizzie?" And she said "I went to get a piece of tin or iron to fix my screen."
- Q. Did she refer to any screen in particular, or simply "my screen"?
- A. My screen.
- Q. Now was there anything else that was said that you recall while she was down stairs, anything about Mrs. Borden that you remember?
- A. I know she asked for somebody to find Mrs. Borden.
- Q. Had she told you anything about where Mrs. Borden was, whether she had gone out or not?
- A. I don't remember.
- Q. Anything about a note?
- A. I heard the note talked over; I don't know who told it.
- Q. You do not recall whether she told it or someone else did?
- A. No, sir.
- Q. Do you remember of someone's going for the sheet?
- A. Yes, sir.
- Q. Who went for the sheet?
- A. Well, I don't remember. I remember their asking for one.
- Q. But you don't remember who went for it?
- A. No, I don't know for sure who went for it.

Q. How long do you think you remained down stairs before you went upstairs?

A. I don't know. I haven't any idea, anything definite.

Q. During the time that you was down stairs was there anything about loosening a dress, any one's dress?

A. Yes.

Q. Well, state what that was.

A. I will have to ask you your question again.

Q. About loosening anyone's dress.

A. Anything said, did you say?

Q. What I want to know is, was anything said or done about loosening anyone's dress?

A. I started to unloosen her dress, thinking she was faint, and she said, "I am not faint."

Q. Was her dress, the upper part of her dress, loose or tight?

A. Her dress was loose here, (indicating) where I started to unloosen it. It was loose here so it pulled out.

Q. Are you able to give us any description of the dress she had on that morning?

A. None whatever, other than that.

Q. When she went up stairs did she go up alone or did anyone go with her?

A. I am not sure.

Q. Did you go with her?

A. I have always thought so; I am not sure.

Q. Were you in the room with her at any time upstairs before a change of dress?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Was anyone else there besides you and Miss Borden at that time?

A. No, sir.

Q. Now was there some conversation there in consequence of which you left the room?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Will you state what that conversation was?

A. She said, "When it is necessary for an undertaker I want Winwood."

Q. What did you do?

A. I went down stairs and waited in the hall to see Dr. Bowen.

Q. And did you see him?

A. After waiting some time, I sent for him. He didn't come through there, and I sent for him and he came.

Q. After you had an interview with him where did you go?

A. Upstairs again.

Q. Did you go to her room?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. What did you see when you went to the room?

A. She was coming out of Miss Emma's room, tying the ribbons of a wrapper.

Q. What sort of wrapper was it?

A. Pink and white stripe, I think.

Q. Was it a tight or loose wrapper, perhaps wrappers are always loose?

A. I couldn't tell you.

Q. Did you at that time see her do anything with reference to the clothes closet door? That is, over the front hall. You know that room that I mean?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. The large closet with a window in it, facing out to the street. What did you see her do with reference to that door?

A. When?

Q. At any time while you were up in that room with her before the officers came?

A. I didn't see her do anything.

Q. Did you at any time during that day see her go to that door?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. When was that?

A. I don't remember just when.

Q. How many times did you see her go to that door?

A. I remember of her going twice.

Q. And what did she do when she went to the room to get into it?

A. She unlocked the door.

Q. Each time?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you recall where she took the key from?

A. No, sir.

Q. Do you know Mr. Fleet; do you know him now?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Assistant marshal of Fall River?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you see anything between him and her with reference to that door? Did he go into that door?

A. I don't know.

Q. Did you see her give any key to Mr. Fleet?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you see her unlock the door for Mr. Fleet?

A. No, sir. At least I don't remember.

Q. You don't remember it?

A. No, sir.

Q. Now did you have any occasion you see the door that leads from Miss Lizzie Borden's room into her father's and stepmother's room? Did you observe that door at any time while you were up there?

A. When?

Q. That morning.

A. Before this?

Q. At any time. Either by the officers calling your attention to it or by any observation of your own, did you see it on August 4th,---that door?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Won't you state what you observed with reference to that

door?

A. I was in Mr. and Mrs. Borden's room while the officers were searching the house ---as I understand, and did then---the first time. They went through that room, looked into the little room opening out of Mr. and Mrs. Borden's room, and they started to open that, and found it locked, and they pulled it open. There was a portiere hanging on the other side.

Q. That is, they pulled the door forcibly open from Mr. Borden's room side?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you notice how it had been fastened on the other side?

A. On Miss Lizzie's side?

Q. Yes.

A. I didn't notice then.

Q. Did you afterwards notice?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. What did you notice about the fastening on Miss Lizzie Borden's side?

A. That it had a hook and a screw-eye.

Q. Did you notice anything else about the hook and the screw-eye?

A. No, sir.

Q. Whether it was pulled out or not, I mean?

A. It was pulled out.

Q. And what sort of a place---as the officers pulled that door open --- what sort of a place did you observe afterwards it left in the wall where this screw was?

A. I didn't observe anything about it.

Q. You simply saw them pull it out?

A. I saw her screwing it in.

Q. You saw her screwing it in again?

A. Sometime during the day.

Q. After the officers had done this thing that you say?

A. Yes, sir; I think in the evening.

Q. Did you remain there all day, Miss Russell?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you remain there that night?

A. Yes, sir. I did not remain all day: I went home.

Q. But returned again?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And remained there Thursday night?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. By the way, before passing away from it, had you suggested to Miss Lizzie Borden to change her dress?

A. No, sir.

Q. Had you heard any one else suggest it?

A. No, sir; I never remember of it.

Q. Upon the Thursday night, did you go into the cellar with any one?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Was it after dark?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Who went with you?

A. Miss Lizzie.

Q. Taking a slop pail, did she?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And did you take anything?

A. Lamp.

MR. ROBINSON. Perhaps you will let her state what occurred; that would be proper.

MR. MOODY. I will.

Q. Did you have anything with you?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. What was it?

A. A lamp.

Q. Into what room in the cellar did you go?

A. Water closet.

Q. Was there anything in the cellar as you went down there at that time, --- any object?

A. Where?

Q. Anywhere in the cellar. Any clothing I mean?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And what were the clothing that were there?

A. The clothing taken from the bodies.

Q. And where were they?

A. In the wash room.

Q. Did you go into the wash room at all at that time?

A. I did not go.

Q. Did Miss Lizzie Borden go into the wash room at that time?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And go to what part of the wash room?

MR. ROBINSON. I reminded you a moment ago that the witness ought to be able to tell what was done, and you should not lead her.

MR. MOODY. I don't intend to.

Q. Tell us what she did.

A. She went to the sink and rinsed out the pail.

Q. Then what was done?

A. Then we went up stairs.

Q. Did you go down cellar again that night?

A. No, sir.

Q. Either alone or with her?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you know whether any body else went down cellar later that night?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you learn from Miss Lizzie Borden whether any one else went down cellar that night?

A. No, sir.

Q. When you went up stairs where did you go?

A. I don't know, I think right up stairs: I think the second story, but I don't know.

Q. Right up stairs: what do you mean by upstairs? On the dining room floor?

A. No, the second floor. Still, I don't know ---

Q. Did any one go up with you?

A. I don't know that.

Q. What room did you sleep in that night?

A. What was Mr. and Mrs. Borden's room.

Q. Do you remember when you parted after coming up from the cellar with Miss Lizzie Borden?

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you see her again that night?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. How soon after?

A. I don't know.

Q. Do you know where she had been in the meantime?

A. I think she had been in her room. Our doors were open.

Q. Were the doors open all the time?

A. Yes, sir, all the time up to that time.

Q. Up to that time?

A. Up to that time.

Q. Well, then, after that time were the doors open?

A. No, they were closed a short time.

Q. You said you slept in which room?

A. What was Mr. and Mrs. Borden's room.

Q. The doors were closed, were they?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. After the doors were closed did you see her again until morning?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. What time?

A. After I opened the door.

Q. How long was that after you closed the door?

A. I don't know for sure; I think fifteen or twenty minutes.

Q. How long after you came upstairs was it before you closed the door between the two rooms?

A. I don't know.

Q. Can't you give me any idea?

A. I cannot: I don't know whether we went right upstairs or not.

Q. You don't remember whether you did or not?

A. No, I do not: I can't tell anything about it.

Q. In any event, the doors were closed at the time you say?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. What were you doing --- that will measure the time, perhaps, as well as anything else --- what were you doing while the doors were closed between the rooms?

A. I was getting ready for bed. I read an account of this affair in the News.

Q. Anything else?

A. I don't think I did anything else.

Q. Any toilet operation of any sort?

A. Bathing.

Q. How long did you remain at the Borden house after the day of the murder --- homicide?

A. I went there when I was called, and I came away the next Monday morning.

Q. Did you stay the intervening nights?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Thursday, Friday, Saturday and Sunday nights?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. What room did you occupy during this time?

A. I occupied what was Mr. and Mrs. Borden's room Thursday and Friday nights: Saturday and Sunday nights I occupied Miss Emma's room.

Q. Miss Emma's room?

A. Miss Emma's room.

Q. Do you remember the breakfast on Sunday morning?

A. No, I do not.

Q. Who got the breakfast Sunday morning?

A. I got the breakfast.

Q. After the breakfast had been got and the dishes had been cleared away, did you leave the lower part of the house at all?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Afterward, did you return?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. About what time in the morning was it when you returned, Miss Russell?

A. I don't know.

Q. Was it before noon?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Will you state what you saw after you returned?

A. I went into the kitchen, and I saw Miss Lizzie at the other end of the stove: I saw Miss Emma at the sink. Miss Lizzie was at the stove, and she had a skirt in her hand, and her sister turned and said, "What are you going to do?" and Lizzie said, "I am going to burn this old thing up; it is covered with paint."

Q. "Covered in paint," --- is that the expression?

A. I don't know whether she said "covered in paint" or "covered with paint."

Q. Do you recall anything else said then?

A. No, sir.

Q. What did you do then?

A. I am quite sure I left the room.

Q. Did you speak to either of them at that time?

A. No, sir, I don't remember that I did. I don't think I did.

Q. Did you come into the room again?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. What did you see then?

A. Miss Lizzie stood up towards the cupboard door,---the cupboard door was open, and she appeared to be either ripping something down or tearing part of this garment.

Q. What part?

A. I don't know for sure; it was a small part.

Q. A smaller part? Go on and state.

A. I said to her, "I wouldn't let anybody see me do that, Lizzie." She didn't make any answer. I left the room.

Q. Did she do anything when you said that?

A. She stepped just one step farther back up towards the cupboard door.

Q. Did you notice where the waist of the dress was when she held the skirt in her hands as you first came in?

A. I didn't know that it was the waist, but I saw a portion of this dress up on the cupboard shelf.

Q. Inside the cupboard?

A. Yes. The door was wide open.

Q. When you came back the second time and she was tearing the smaller part, did you see the skirt?

A. Well, I am not positive; I think I did.

Q. Did you have any more talk with her that day, or did she say anything to you about it?

A. No, sir.

Q. At that time were there any police officers in the house?

A. No, sir.

Q. Were there any officers about the premises?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Do you know whether there was anyone else in the house except yourself and Miss Emma and Miss Lizzie Borden?

A. I don't think that there was.

Q. When had Bridget left? Do you know whether she had left before the Sunday morning or not?

A. Yes, she had left.

Q. Before that?

A. Before that.

Q. Do you know Mr. Hanscom?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Did you see him at the Borden house on Monday morning, the following day?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. I do not ask you what he said to you or you to him, but did you have some conversation with him?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. In what room?

A. The parlor.

Q. In consequence of that conversation, what did you do? What did you do after the conversation with Mr. Hanscom?
(No Answer)

Q. Did you see anyone after that conversation?

A. I saw Miss Lizzie and Miss Emma.

Q. Where did you see them?

A. In the dining room.

Q. What talk passed between you in the dining room?

A. I said to them---I said, "I am afraid, Lizzie, the worst thing you could have done was to burn that dress. I have been asked about your dresses."

Q. What did she reply?

A. She said, "Oh, what made you let me do it? Why didn't you tell me?"

Q. Miss Russell, you testified before the inquest, did you?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. You testified at the preliminary hearing?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And you testified once and then again before the Grand Jury?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. At either of the three previous times---at the inquest, at the preliminary, or at the first testimony before the Grand Jury, did you say anything about the burning of this dress?

A. No, sir.

MR. ROBINSON. Wait a moment. I do not see how that is at all material. The government is not trying to fortify this witness, I hope.

MR. MOODY. Well, I do not press it. If you don't want it, I don't care to put it in.

MR. ROBINSON. Oh, it is not what I want. You are trying the government's case; I am objecting.

MR. MOODY. I waive the question.

MR. ROBINSON. I think it should be stricken out.

MR. MOODY. I agree that it may be stricken out.

Q. Miss Russell, to go back again to the day of the homicide, do you remember anything about a search for a note by anyone -- Dr. Bowen?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. State what there is about that.

A. When we were in the dining room Lizzie was lying down, and I think Dr. Bowen came in---I always thought it was Dr. Bowen---came in and said, "Lizzie, do you know anything about the note your mother had?" And she hesitated and said, well, no, she didn't. He said, "I have looked in the wastebasket," and I think I said,---no, he said, "Have you looked in her pocket?" And I think I said, "Well, then she must have put it in the fire." And Lizzie said, "yes, she must have put it in the fire."

CROSS EXAMINATION

Q. (By Mr. Robinson.) I don't care to trouble you at all about the conversation of Wednesday evening, only, as I understand it, she told you that they had all been sick up there?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. And that Mr. and Mrs. Borden were sick and that the doctor had been ---

MR. MOODY. Oh, excuse me; an important matter I forgot.



Special Offer for Subscribers to the Lizzie Borden Quarterly

Now Available:

Primary Sources of the Lizzie Borden case on CD-ROM!



Preliminary Hearing in the Borden Case before Judge Blaisdell, August 25 through September 1, 1892.

5 Volume PDF version, transcribed by Harry Widdows and Stefani Koorey, with an introductory essay by Koorey.

The Trial of Lizzie A. Borden. Upon an Indictment charging her with the murders of Abby Durfee Borden and Andrew Jackson Borden. 2 Volume PDF and Word document. Transcribed by Harry Widdows.

Inquest Upon the Deaths of Andrew J. and Abby D. Borden, August 9 - 11, 1892. Volumes I and II. PDF and Word document in 2 volumes. Transcribed by Stefani Koorey.

The Witness Statements. PDF and Word document. Transcribed by Stefani Koorey and Terence Duniho.

Porter, Edwin H. *The Fall River Tragedy*, 1893. PLUS: Pearson, Edmund. *The Trial of Lizzie Borden*, 1937. Complete PDF versions of both books with all original photographs.

Prelim, \$29.99; Trial \$19.99; Inquest/Witness \$19.99; Porter/Pearson, \$14.99;
Super Disk containing all items, \$49.99.

A portion of all sales will be contributed to the *Lizzie Borden Quarterly*.

Visa/MasterCard, Money Orders, Checks accepted. Free Shipping!
To purchase or make inquiries, please email koorey@lizzieandrewborden.com

DIRECT EXAMINATION, resumed

Q. (By Mr. Moody.) Miss Russell, will you tell us what kind of a dress---give us a description of the dress that she burned, that you have testified about, on Sunday morning?

A. It was a cheap cotton Bedford cord.

Q. Bedford cord?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. What was its color?

A. Light-blue ground with a dark figure---small figure.

Q. Do you know when she got it?

A. I am not positive.

Q. Well, about when she got it?

A. In the early spring.

Q. Of that same year, do you mean, or some other year?

A. Yes, sir, I think that same year.

Q. Was your attention called to it at the time she got it in any way?

A. At the time I first saw it?

(Editor's note: Unfortunately, we must pause at this point in the testimony. But don't despair! Assuming time and tide, our entire staff will be greeting you in 2003. Until then, as Lizzie might have said, we wish you all a most Merry Christmas and Happy New Year!)

THE SALEM WITCH TRIALS

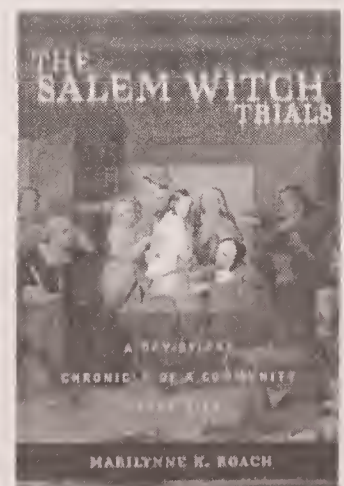
A Day-by-Day Chronicle of a Community under Siege

by Marilynne K. Roach

"What an accomplishment! Marilynne Roach tells the story with rare detail and deep understanding. Her scholarship and sensibility make *The Salem Witch Trials* an invaluable must-have for those interested in the trials and the times. Reading her work is almost like being there. Outstanding."


— Alison D'Amaro, Director of Education, Salem Witch Museum

Based on twenty-seven years of original archival research, including the discovery of previously unknown documents, this day-by-day narrative of the panic that swept through Salem Village in 1692 and 1693 reveals new connections behind the events, and brings into focus the personalities involved. Roach opens *The Salem Witch Trials* with chapters on the history of the Puritan colonies of New England, and explains how these people regarded the metaphysical and the supernatural. The account of the days from January 1692 to January 1697 keeps in order the large cast of characters, places events in their correct contexts, and at times contradicts earlier assumptions about the gruesome events. Avoiding theories in favor of bringing readers as close as possible to the immediate experience of the Witch Trials, Roach's book is the authoritative look at a persistently fascinating episode in American history.



The Salem Witch Trials. A Day-by-Day Chronicle of a Community under Siege by Marilynne K. Roach. published by Cooper Square Press, ISBN 0-8154-1221-5. 728 pages, 35 black & white illustrations, \$35.00 hardcover, October 2002

LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY



Volume 1, Number 1 ---- Not Available
 Volume 1, Number 2 ---- Not Available
 Volume 1, Number 3 ---- \$ 15.00
 Volume 1, Number 4 ---- \$ 10.00
 Remaining Back Issues - \$ 8.00

BACK ISSUES

LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY

Bristol Community College
 777 Elsbree Street
 Fall River, MA 02720-7391

Non-Profit
 Organization
 U.S. Postage
PAID
 Fall River, MA
 Permit No. 140

Make check or money order payable to the

LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY

For new subscribers either remove the
 label and write your name and address or
 just write to us with the same information.
 Please include your check or money order.

Mail to:

LIZZIE BORDEN QUARTERLY

Dr. Gabriela Schalow Adler - Publisher
 Bristol Community College
 777 Elsbree Street
 Fall River MA 02720-7391

If your label says - **Remaining Issues: 0** - Renew your subscription now!

✂ Cut-out or duplicate coupon and mail today! ☒ Your Choice!

U.S.A. → 1 Year \$18.00 ☐ 2 Years \$ 30.00 ☐

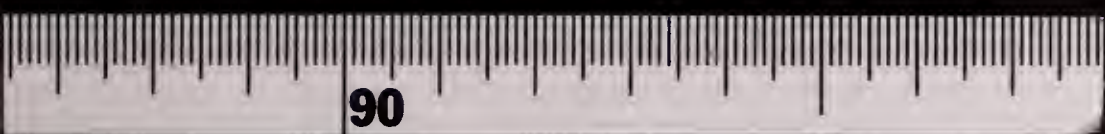
Non U.S.A. → 1 Year \$24.00 ☐ 2 Years \$ 40.00 ☐

Affix mailing label here.

ACME
BOOKBINDING CO. INC.

JUN 00 2004

100 CAMBRIDGE STREET
CHARLESTOWN, MA 02129



UMass
Amherst
10/01/12
Truck 2

644



003631506

312066028832602

The Lizzie Bord